



Hannibale
Britannum
fuerit



To the Right Worshipful,
THOMAS PRINCE Esq;
Governour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouith;
with the Worshipfull, the
MAGISTRATES,
His Assistants in the said Government:

N. M. wisheth Peace and Prosperity in this Life, and
Eternal Happiness in that which is to come.

Right Worshipfull,

THe consideration of the weight of Duty that lieth upon us, to Commemorize to future Generations the memorable passages of Gods Providence to us and our Predecessors in the beginning of this Plantation, hath wrought in me a restlessness of spirit, and earnest desire, that something might be achieved in that behalf, more (or at least otherwise) then as yet hath been done. Many discouragements I have met with, both from within and without my self: but reflecting upon the Ends I have proposed to my self in setting out in this Work, it hath afforded me some support, viz. The glory.

glory of God, and the good of present and future Generations. Being also induced hereunto, by the consideration that your selves (especially some of you) are fully acquainted with many of the particulars, both concerning Persons and Things, inserted in the following Narrative, and can on your own knowledge assert them for Truth. Were it so that any other had travelled in this kinde, in such a way as might have conduced to a brief and satisfactory intelligence in particulars relating to the premises, I would have spared this labour, and have satisfied my self in perusal of their Works, rather than to have set pen to paper about the same; but having neither seen nor heard of any especially respecting this our Plantation of New-Plimouth, which God hath honoured to be the first in this Land, I have made bold to present your Worships with, and to publish to the world something of the very first Beginnings of the great Actings of God in New-England, begun at New-Plimouth: wherein, the greatest part of my intelligence hath been borrowed from my much honoured Uncle, Mr. William Bradford, and such Manuscripts as he left in his Study, from the year 1620, unto 1646; whom had God continued in this world some longer time, and given him rest from his other more important Affairs, we might probably have had these things from an abler Pen, and better digested, then now you may expect. Certain Diurnals of the honoured Mr. Edward Winslow, have also afforded me good light and help: and what from them both, and otherwise I have obtained, that I judged suitable for the following Discourse, I have with care and faithfulness related; and have therein more sollici-

The Epistle Dedicatory.

solicitous followed the truth of things (many of which I can also assert on my own knowledge) then I have studied quaintness in expressions.

I should gladly have spoken more particularly of the Neighbouring *United Colonies*, whose ends and aims in their Transplanting of themselves and Families, were the same with ours, viz. *The glory of God, the propagation of the Gospel, and enlargement of His Majesties Dominions*; but for want of intelligence, and that I may not prevent a better Pen, I shall onely make mention of some of their Worthies that we have been most acquainted with.

I shall not insist upon the Clime nor Soyle of the Country, its Commodities or Discommodities; nor at large on the Natives, or their Customes and Manners: all which have been already declared by Captain *Smith*, Mr. *Higginson*, Mr. *Williams*, Mr. *Wood*, and others. What it is, and what my aims at Gods glory, and my good affections to the place and people of whom I treat, may make it, I present your Worships with; Humbly craving your favourable aspect, and good acceptance of my poor Endeavours; and that my self and it may finde protection and shelter under the wings of your pious Patronage, to defend us against such criticall and censorious eyes and tongues, as may either carp at my expressions, or misconstrue my intentions. The ~~art~~ experience I have had of your undeserved Favour, and Respect to me, in my many years Service of the *Publick*, and my observation in that time, that you have desired something of this nature might be done, hath encouraged me hereunto: your good acceptance whereof, shall ever oblige me to answer returning of gratitude.

The Epistle Dedicatory.

tude, and administer to me further cause of thankfulness, That God hath given me an Habitation under your just and prudent Administrations; and wish for a Succession of such as may be skilfull to lead our *Israel* in this their peregrination; and when God shall take you hence, to receive the Crown of your labours and travels. So prayeth,

Your Worships humble Servant,

Nathaniel Morton.



John Alfred Narard. 1835.

TO THE
CHRISTIAN
Reader :

Grace and Peace be multiplied; With Profit by
this following Narration.

Gentle Reader,

I Have for some length of time looked upon it as a duty incumbent, especially on the immediate Successors of those that have had so large Experience of those many memorable and signall Demonstrations of Gods goodness, viz. The first Beginners of this Plantation in New-England, to commit to writing his gracious dispensations on that behalf; having so many inducements thereunto, not only otherwise, but so plentifully in the Sacred Scriptures: That so, what we have seen, and what our fathers have told us, we may not hide from our children, shewing to the generations to come the praises of the Lord; that especially the seed of Abraham his servant, and the children of Jacob his chosen, may remember his marvellous works in the beginning and progress of the planting of New-

Psal. 78.3,4.

Psal. 105.8,9.

To the Christian Reader.

New-England, his wonders, and the judgements of his mouth: *How that God brought a vine into this Wilderness; that he cast out the Heathen and planted it; that he made room for it, and caused it to take deep root, and it filled the Land; so that it hath sent forth its boughs to the Sea, and its branches to the River. And not onely so, but also that He hath guided his people by his strength to his holy Habitation, and planted them in the Mountain of his Inheritance, in respect of precious Gospel-Enjoyments. So that we may not onely look back to former Experiences of Gods goodness to our Predecessors, (though many years before) and so have our faith strengthened in the Mercies of God for our times; that so the Church being one Numerical Body, might not onely even for the time he spake with us in our Forefathers, by many gracious manifestations of his glorious Attributes, Wisdome, Goodness, and Truth, improved for their good: but also rejoice in present Enjoyments of both outward and spirituall mercies, as fruits of their Prayers, Tears, Travels and Labours: That as especially God may have the glory of all, unto whom it is most due; so also some rayes of glory may reach the Names of those blessed Saints that were the main Instruments of the beginning of this happy Enterprize.*

So then, gentle Reader, thou mayest take notice, that the main Ends of publishing this small History, is, That God may have his due praise, His Servants the Instruments have their Names embalmed, and the present and future Ages may have the fruit and benefit of Gods great work, in the Relation of the first Planting of New-England. Which Ends, if attained, will be great cause of rejoicing to the Publisher thereof, if God gives him life,

Psal. 80.8, 9.

Exod. 15.13.

Psal. 66. 6.

Hosea 12. 4.

To the Christian Reader.

life, and opportunity to take notice thereof.

The Method I have observed, is (as I could) in some measure answerable to the ends forenamed, in inserting some Acknowledgements of Gods Goodness, Faithfulness, and Truth upon special occasions, with allusion to the Scriptures; and also taking notice of some special Instruments, and such main and special Particulars as were perspicuously remarkable, in way of Commendation in them, so farre as my intelligence would reach; and especially in a faithful Com-memorizing, and declaration of Gods wonderful works for, by, and to his people, in preparing a place for them, by driving out the Heathen before them; bringing them through a Sea of Troubles; preserving and protecting them from, and in those dangers that attended them in their low estate, when they were strangers in the Land; and making this howling Wilderness a Chamber of rest, safety, and pleasantness, whiles the storms of his Displeasure have not onely tossed, but endangered the overwhelming of great States and Kingdomes, and hath now made it to us a fruitful Land, sowed it with the seed of man and beast; but especially in giving us so long a peace, together with the Gospel of peace, and so great a freedome in our Civil and Religious Enjoyments; and also in giving us hopes that we may be Instruments in his hands, not onely of enlarging of our Princes Dominions, but to enlarge the Kingdome of the Lord Jesus, in the Conversion of the poor blinde Natives.

And now, Courteous Reader, that I may not hold thee too long in the Porch, I onely crave of thee to reade this following Discourse with a single eye, and with the same ends as I had in penning it. Let not the smallness of our Beginnings, nor weakness of Instruments, make the thing

seem

To the Christian Reader.

seem little, or the work despicable; but on the contrary, let the greater praise be rendred unto God, who hath effected great things by small means. Let not the harshness of my style, prejudice thy taste or appetite to the dish I present thee with: Accept it as freely as I give it thee. Carp not at what thou dost not approve, but use it as a Remembrance of the Lords goodness, to engage to true Thankfulness and Obedience; so may it be a help to thee in thy journey through the wilderness of this world, to that Eternal Rest which is only to be found in the Heavenly Canaan: which is the earnest desire of

Thy Christian Friend,

Nathaniel Morton.

NEW-

I

NEW-ENGLAND'S MEMORIAL:

O R,

A brief Relation of the most Remarkable Passages of
the Providence of God manifested to the Planters of
New-England in *AMERICA*.

And first, of the beginning of the first Plantation in N.E.

C A L L E D

bis
N E W - P L I M O U T H . *bobis*

IT is the usuall manner of the Dispensation of the Maje-
sty of Heaven, to work wonderfully by weak means
for the effectuating of great things, to the intent that he
may have the more Glory to himself: Many instances
hereof might be produced, both out of the Sacred Scri-
ptures, and common Experience; and amongst many others of
this kinde, the late Happy and Memorable Enterprize of the
Planting of that part of *America* called *New-England*, de-
serveth to be Commemorized to future Posterity.

IN the Year 1602. divers godly Christians of our English
Nation in the North of *England*, being studious of Refor-
mation, and therefore not onely witnessing against Humane
Inventions, and Additions in the Worship of God, but minding
most the positive and practical part of Divine Institutions, they
entred into Covenant, To walk with God, and one with an-
other, in the enjoyment of the Ordinances of God, according

for
John Foster
1696

to the Primitive Pattern in the Word of God. But finding by experience they could not peaceably enjoy their own liberty in their Native Country, without offence to others that were differently minded, they took up thoughts of removing themselves and their Families into the *Netherlands*, which accordingly they endeavoured to accomplish, but met with great hindrance: yet after some time, the good hand of God removing obstructions, they obtained their desires, arriving in *Holland*, they settled themselves in the City of *Leyden*, in the year 1610, and there they continued divers years in a comfortable condition, enjoying much sweet society and spiritual comfort in the wayes of God, living peaceably among themselves, and being courteously entertained, and lovingly respected by the *Dutch*, amongst whom they were strangers, having for their Pastor Mr. *John Robinson*, a man of a learned, polished, and modest spirit, pious and studious of the Truth, largely accomplished with suitable Gifts and Qualifications to be a Shepherd over this Flock of Christ; having also a fellow-helper with him in the Eldership, Mr. *William Brewster*, a man of approved Piety, Gravity, and Integrity, very eminently furnished with gifts suitable to such an Office.

But notwithstanding their amiable and comfortable carrying on, (as hath been laid) although the Church of Christ on Earth in holy Writ, is sometimes called *Heaven*; yet there is always in their most perfect state here in this lower world, very much wanting as to absolute and perfect happiness, which is only reserved for the time and place of the full enjoyment of Celestial Glory: for, although this Church was at peace, and in rest at this time, yet they took up thoughts of removing themselves into *America* with common consent; the Proposition of removing thither being set on foot, and prosecuted by the Elders upon just and weighty grounds: for, although they did quietly and sweetly enjoy their Church liberties under the *States*, yet they foresaw that *Holland* would be no place for their Church and Posterity to continue in comfortably, at least in that measure that they hoped to finde abroad; and that

that for these Reasons following, which I shall recite as received from themselves.

First, Because themselves were of a different Language from the Dutch, where they lived, and were settled in their way, insomuch that in ten years time, whilst their Church sojourned amongst them, they could not bring them to reform the neglect of Observation of the Lords-day as a Sabbath, or any other thing amiss amongst them.

Secondly, Because their Countrymen, who came over to joyn with them, by reason of the hardness of the Country, soon spent their Estates, and were then forced either to return back to England, or to live very meanly.

Thirdly, That many of their Children, through the extreme necessity that was upon them, although of the best dispositions, and graciously inclined, and willing to bear part of their Parents burthens, were oftentimes so oppressed with their heavy labours, that although their Spirits were free and willing, yet their Bodies bowed under the weight of the same, and became decrepid in their early youth, and the vigour of Nature consumed in the very bud. And that which was very lamentable, and of all sorrows most heavy to be born, was, that many by these occasions, and the great licentiousnes of Youth in that Country, and the manifold temptations of the place, were drawn away by evil examples into extravagant and dangerous courses; getting the reins on their necks, and departing from their Parents: Some became Souldiers, others took upon them faire Voyages by Sea; and other some worse courses tending to dissoluteness; and the destruction of their Souls, to the great grief of their Parents; and the dishonour of God; and that the place being a place of great licentiousness and liberty to Children, they could not educate them, nor could they give them due correction without reproof or reproach from their Neighbours.

Fourthly, That their Posterity would in few generations become Dutch, and so lose their interest in the English Nation; they being desirous rather to enlarge His Majesties Dominions,

This bath been
graciously an-
swereed first, by
moving the
hearts of many
of his Servants
to be very in-
strumental in
this work, with
some good inc-
eys, & hopes of
a further bles-
sing in that re-
spect.

and to live under their Naturall PRINCE.

Fifthly and lastly, and which was not the least, a great hope and inward Zeal they had of laying some good Foundation, or at least to make some way thereunto, for the propagating and advancement of the Gospel of the Kingdome of Christ in those remote parts of the World, yea although they should be but as stepping-stones unto others for the performance of so great a Work.

These and such like were the true Reasons of their removall, and not as some of their Adversaries did upon the rumour thereof, cast out flanders against them; as if the State was weary of them, and had rather driven them out, (as Heathen Histories have feigned of *Moses* and the *Israelites*, when they went out of *Egypt*) then that it was their own free choice and motion.

I will therefore mention a particular or two, to evince the contrary.

And first, Although some of them were low in their Estates, yet the Dutch observing that they were diligent, faithful and careful of their engagements, had great respect to them, and strove for their custome.

Again, secondly, the Magistrates of the City of Leyden where they lived, about the time of their coming away, in the publick place of Justice gave this commendable Testimony of them, in reproof of the Walloons who were of the French Church in the City; *These English* (said they) *have lived now amongst us Ten years, and yet we never had any Suit, or Accusation against them; or any of them; but your Strifes, and Quarrels are continuall.*

The Reasons of their Removal above-named being debated first in private, and thought weighty, were afterwards propounded in publick; and after solemn dayes of Humiliation observed both in publick and in private, it was agreed, That part of the Church should go before their Brethren into America, to prepare for the rest: and if in case the major part of

the

the Church did chuse to go over with the first, then the Pastor to go along with them; but if the major part stayed, that he was then to stay with them.

They having employed sundry Agents to treat with several Merchants in *England*, who adventured some considerable Sums in a way of valuation to such as went personally on in the Voyage; the Articles of Agreement about the premises being fully concluded with the said Merchants, and sundry Difficulties and Obstructions removed, having also obtained Letters Patents for the Northern parts of *Virginia*, of King James of Famous Memory; All things were got ready and provided, a small Ship was bought and fitted out in *Holland*, of about sixty Tun, called *The Speedwell*, as to serve to transport some of them over, so also to stay in the Country, and attend upon Fishing, and such other affairs as might be for the good and benefit of the Colony when they came thither. Another Ship was hired at *London*, of Burthen about Ninescore, called *The May-flower*, and all other things got in a readiness: so being prepared to depart, they had a solemn day of Humiliation, the Pastor teaching a part of the day very profitably and suitably to the present occasion, the rest of the time was spent in pouring out of Prayers unto the Lord with great fervency, mixed with abundance of tears; and the time being come that they must depart, they were accompanied with most of their Brethren out of the City, unto a Town called *Delfs Haven*; where the Ship lay ready to receive them: so they left that goodly and pleasant City, which had been their resting place above eleven years; but they knew that they were *Pilgrims and Strangers here below*, and looked not much on these things, but lifted up their eyes to Heaven, their dearest Country, where God hath prepared for them a *City*, and therein quieted their spirits.

When they came to the place, they found the Ship and all things ready; and such of their Friends as could not come with them, followed after them, and sundry came from *Amsterdam* to see them shipt, and to take their leaves of them.

*The Text of
Scripture was
Ezra 8.21.*

Hebr. xi. 16.

One night was spent with little sleep with the most, but with friendly entertainment, and Christian discourse, and other reall expressions of true Christian love. The next day the wind being fair they went on Board, and their friends with them, where truely-doleful was the sight of that sad and mournful parting, to hear what sighs and sobs and prayers did sound amongst them; what tears did gush from every eye, and pithy speeches pierced each others heart, that fundry of the Dutch strangers that stood on the Key as spectators, could not refrain from tears: yet comfortable and sweet it was, to see such lively and true expressions of dear and unfeigned love. But the Tide (which stayes for no man) calling them away, that were thus loth to depart, their Reverend Pastor falling down on his knees, and they all with him, with watery cheeks commended them with most fervent Prayers unto the Lord and his blessing; and then with mutual imbraces, and many tears, they took their leaves one of another, which proved to be the last leave to many of them. Thus hoysing Sail with a prosperous gale of wind, they came in short time to Southampton, where they found the bigger Ship come from London, being ready with all the rest of their Company, meeting each other with a joyful welcome and mutual congratulation.

*This was about
the second of July 1620.*

At their parting, their Pastor Mr. John Robinson wrote a Letter to the whole Company, which I thought meet here to insert, being so fruitfull in it self, and suitable to their occasions: of you of men, evill of yea, and good of yea, being either not send had daily. *And I beseeche you all,* *Loving Christian Friends,* *gath and, array your rods*
I *Do heartily, and in the Lord salute you, as being those with whom I am present in my best affections, and most earnest longings after you, though I be constrained for a while to be bodily absent from you: I say, Constrained; God knowing how willingly, and much rather then otherwise, I would have born my part with you in this first brunt, were I not by strong necessity held back for the present. Make account of me in the mean time as a man divided in my self, with great pain, (and as Natural bonds set aside)*

aside) having my better part with you: And although I doubt not but in your godly wisdomes you both foresee and resolve upon that which concerneth your present state and condition, both severally and jointly; yet have I thought it but my duty to addē some further spur of provocation unto them who run already, if not because you need it, yet because I owe it in love and duty. And first, as we are daily to renew our Repentance with our God, especially for our sins known, and generally for our unknown trespasses: So doth the Lord call us in a singular manner, upon occasions of such difficulty and danger as lieth upon you, to a both narrow search, and careful reformation of your wayes in his sight, lest he calling to remembrance our sins forgotten by us, or unrepented of, take advantage against us, and in judgement leave us to be swallowed up in one danger or other: whereas on the contrary, sin being taken away by earnest Repentance, and the pardon thereof from the Lord sealed up to a mans Conscience by his Spirit, great shall be his security and peace in all dangers, sweet his comfort in all distress, with happy deliverance from all evil, whether in life or death. Now next after this heavenly peace with God and our own Consciences, we are carefully to provide for peace with all men, what in us lyeth, especially with our Associates; and for that, watchfulness must be had than we neither at all in our selves do give, no nor easily take offence being given by others. Woe be to the world for offences, for al though it be necessary, considering the malice of Satan and mans corruption, that offences come, yet woe unto the man, or woman either, by whom the offence cometh, saith Christ; Matth. 18. 7. and if offences in the unseasonable use of things in themselves indifferent, be more to be feared than death it self, as the Apostle teacheth, 1 Cor. 9. 15. how much more in things simply evil, in which neither honour of God nor love of man is thought worthy to be regarded? Neither yet is it sufficient that we keep our selves by the grace of God from giving of offence, except withdraw we be armed against the taking of them when they are given by others, for how imperfect and lame is the work of Grace in that person, who wants Charity to cover a multitude of offences? as the Scripture speaks. Neither are you to be exhorted to this grace,

onely upon the common grounds of Christianity, which are, that persons ready to take offence, either want Charity to cover offences, or Wisdom duly to weigh humane frailties; or lastly, are gross though close Hypocrites, as Christ our Lord teacheth, Mat.7.1,2,3. as indeed, in my own experience few or none have been found which sooner give offence, then such as easily take it; neither have they ever proved sound and profitable Members in Societies, who have nourished this touchy humour. But besides these, there are divers Motives provoking you above others to great care and conscience this way; as first, there are many of you strangers as to the persons, so to the infirmities one of another; and so stand in need of more watchfulness this way, lest when such things fall out in men and women as you expected not, you be inordinately affected with them, which doth require at your hands much Wisdom and Charity for the covering and preventing of incident offences that way. And lastly, your intended course of Civil Community, will minister continuall occasion of offence, and will be as fuel for that fire, except you diligently quench it with brotherly forbearance: and if taking of offence causethly or easily at mens doings, be so carefully to be avoided; how much more heed is to be taken that we take not offence at God himself? which yet we certainly do, so oft as we do murmur at his Providence in our crosses, or bear impatiently such afflictions as wherewith he is pleased to visit us. Store up therefore Patience against the evil day; without which, we take offence at the Lord himself in his holy and just works. A fourth thing there is carefully to be provided for; viz. That with your common Imployments, you joyn common Affections truly bent upon the generall Good, avoiding as a deadly Plague of your both Common and Special Comforts, all retirenednes of minde for proper advantage; and all singularly affected every manner of way, let every man repress in himself, and the whole Body in each person, as so many Rebels against the Common Good, all private respects of mens selves, not sorting with the general Convenience. And as men are careful not to have a new House shaken with any violence, before it be well settled, and the parts firmly knit: so be you, I beseech you Brethren, much more carefull that the House of God (which

New-Englands Memoriall.

(which you are, and are to be) be not taken with unnecessary Novelties, or other Oppositions at the first setting thereof.

Lastly, Whereas you are to become a Body Politick, using amongst your selves Civil Government, and are not furnished with persons of special Eminency above the rest, to be chosen by you into Office of Government; Let your wisdome and godlines appear not only in choosing such persons as do intirely love, and will promote the Common Good; but also in yielding unto them all due Honour and Obedience in their lawful Administrations, not beholding in them the ordinarynes of their persons, but Gods Ordinance for your good: not being like the foolish multitude, who more honour the gay Coat, then either the virtuous minde of the man, or the glorious Ordinance of the Lord: But you know better things, and that the Image of the Lords Power and Authority which the Magistrate beareth is honourable, in how mean persons soever; and this duty you may the more willingly, and ought the more conscientially to perform, because you are (at least for the present) to have them for your ordinary Gouvernours, which your selves shall make choice of for that work.

Sundry other things of Importance I could put you in minde of, and of those before-mentioned in more words; but I will not so far wrong your godly mindes, as to think you heedless of these things, there being also divers amongst you so well able both to admonish themselves and others of what concerneth them. These few things therefore, and the same in few words, I do earnestly commend unto your Care and Conscience, joyning therewith my daily and incessant Prayers unto the Lord, That He who hath made the Heavens, and the Earth, and Sea, and all Rivers of Waters, and whose Providence is over all his Works, especially over all his dear Children for good, would so guide and gnda you in your wayes, as inwardly by his Spirit, so outwardly by the hand of his power, as that both you, and we also for and with you, may have after-matter of praising his Name all the dayes of your and our lives. Fare you well in Him in whom you trust, and in whom I rest.

An unsighed well-wisher of your happy success in this hopefull Voyage,

JOHN ROBINSON.

C

Of

ceipt of this letter, the company was called together, and it was publiclyk read amongst them, which had gnd acceptance with all, and after fruit with many.

Of the Troubles that befell the first Planters upon the Coast
of England, and in their Voyage in coming over into
New England, and their arrival at Cape Cod,
alias Cape James.

All things being got ready, and every busines dispatch'd,
they ordered and distributed their Company for either
Ship, (as they conceived for the best) and chose a Governour,
and two or three Assistants for each Ship, to order the people
by the way, and to see to the disposing of the Provision, and
such like affairs ; all which was not only with the liking of the
Masters of the Ships, but according to their desires : which
being done, they set Sail from Southampton the fifth of August,
1620. But alas, the best Enterprizes meet oftentimes with
many discouragements ; for they had not sailed farre, before
Mr. Reynolds, the Master of the lesser Ship, complained that he
found his Ship so leak, as he durst not put further to Sea :
on which they were forced to put in at Dartmouth, Mr. Jones
the Master of the biggest Ship likewise putting in there with
him ; and the said lesser Ship was searched, and mended, and
judged sufficient for the Voyage by the Workmen that mended
her : On which, both the said Ships put to Sea the second time,
but they had not sailed above an hundred Leagues, ere the
said Reynolds again complained of his Ship being so leak, as
that he feared he should founder in the Sea, if he held on ; and
then both Ships bore up again, and went in at Plimorth : but
being there searched again, no great matter appeared, but it
was judged to be the general weaknes of the Ship. But the
true reaon of the retarding and delaying of matters was not
as yet discerned : the one of them respecting the Ship (as after-
wards was found) was, that she was over-Masted, which when
she came to her trim in that respect, she did well, and made
divers profitable and successful Voyages. But secondly, and
more especially, by the deceit of the Master and his Company,

who

who were hired to stay a whole year in the Country; but now being dillike, and fearing want of Victuals, they plotted this stratagem to free themselves, as afterwards was known, and by some of them confessed; for they apprehended that the greater Ship being of force, and in whom most of the Provisions were bestowed, that she would retain enough for her self, whatsoever became of them and the Passengers: But so strong was self-love and deceit in this man, as he forgot all duty and former kindness, and dealt thus falsely with them. These things thus falling out, it was resolved by the whole to dismiss the lesser Ship, and part of the Company with her, and that the other part of the Company should proceed in the bigger Ship: which when they had ordered matters in reference thereto, they made another sad parting, the one Ship, (*viz.*) the lesser going back for London, and the other (*viz.*) *The May-flower*, Mr. Jones being Master, proceeding on in the intended Voyage.

These troubles being blown over, and now all being compact together in one Ship, they put to Sea again with a prosperous wind: but after they had enjoyed fair winds for a season, they met with many contrary winds and fierce storms, with which their Ship was shrewdly shaken, and her upper works made very leaky, and one of the main Beams of the Mid-ships was bowed and cracked, which put them to some fear, that she would not be able to perform the Voyage; on which the principal of the Seamen and Passengers had serious consultation what to do, whether to return or hold on: but the Ship proving strong under water, by a Screw the said Beam was brought into his place again; which being done, and well secured by the Carpenter, they resolved to hold their Voyage; and so after many boisterous storms in which they could bear no sail, but were forced to lye at Hull many dayes together; after long beating at Sea, they fell in with the land called *Cape Cod: the

* Cape Cod,
so called at the
first by Captain
Gould and
his Company,
Anno 1602,

because they took much of that Fish there; and afterward called Cape James by Captain Smith. The Point of the Cape is called Point Cave, and Tuckers Tetroit; and by the French and Dutch Malacar, by reason of the perillous Sholes.

which being made, and certainly known to be it, they were no little joyful. After some little deliberation had amongst themselves with the Master of the Ship, they tacked about to stand to the Southward, to finde some place about Hudsons River, (according to their first intentions) for their Habitation: But they had not sailed that Course above half a day, but they fell amongst perillous Sholes and Breakers; and they were so farre intangled therewith, as they conceived themselves in great danger; and the wind shrinking upon them withall, they resolved to bear up again for the Cape aforesaid: the next day, by Gods Providence, they got into the Cape harbour. Thus they arrived at *Cape Cod*, alias *Cape James*, in November 1620. and being brought safe to land, they fell upon their knees and blessed the God of Heaven, who had brought them over the vast and furious Ocean, and delivered them from many perils and miseries.

Nevertheless, it is to be observed, that their putting into this place was partly by reason of a storm, by which they were forced in, but more especially by the fraudulency and contrivance of the aforesaid Mr. *Jones*, the Master of the Ship: for, their Intention, as is before-noted, and his Engagement, was to *Hudsons River*; but some of the *Dutch* having notice of their intentions, and having thoughts about the same time of erecting a Plantation there likewise, they fraudulently hired the said *Jones* by delays while they were in *England*, and now under pretence of the danger of the Sholes, &c. to disappoint them in their going thither: But God out-shoots Satan oftentimes in his own Bow; for had they gone to *Hudsons River* as before expressed, it had proved very dangerous to them: for although it is a place farre more commodious, and the Soil more fertile, yet then abounding with a multitude of pernicious Salvages, whereby they would have been in great peril of their lives, and so the work of transplanting the Gospel into these parts, much endangered to have been hindred and retarded: but God so disposed, that the place where they afterward seeld was much depopulated by a great Mortality amongst the Natives.

Of this Plot be
twixt the Dutch
and Mr. *Jones*.
I have had late
and certain In-
telligence.

tives, which fell out about two years before their arrival, whereby he made way for the carrying on of his good purpose in promulgating of his Gospel as aforesaid.

But before we pass on, let the Reader with me make a pause, and seriously consider this poor peoples present condition, the more to be raised up to admiration of Gods goodness towards them in their preservation: for being now passed the vast Ocean, and a sea of Troubles before in their Preparation, they had now no Friends to welcome them, no Inns to entertain or refresh them, no Hous-es, or much less Towns to repair unto to seek for succour: the *Barbarians* that *Paul* the Apostle fell amongst in his Shipwreck at the Isle *Melita*, shewed him no small kindness; but these Salvage *Barbarians* when they met with them (as after will appear) were readier to fill their sides full of Arrows, then otherwise: and for the season, it was Winter, and they that know the Winters of the Country, know them to be sharp and violent, subject to cruel and fierce Storms, dangerous to travel to known places, much more to search unknown Coasts. Besides, what could they see but a hideous and desolate Wilderness, full of wilde Beasts and wilde Men? and what multitudes of them there were, they then knew not: neither could they as it were go up to the Top of *Pisgah*, to view from this Wilderness a more goodly Country to feed their hopes; for which way soever they turned their eyes (save upward to Heaven) they could have little solace or content in respect of any outward object; for Summer being ended, all things stand in appearance with a weather-beaten face, and the whole Country full of Woods and Thickets, represented a wilde and salvage hew; if they looked behinde them, there was the mighty Ocean which they had passed, and was now as a main Bar and Gulph to separate them from all the Civil Parts of the World. The Master of the Ship and his Company pressing with speed to look out a place for their Settlement at some near distance, for the season was such as he would not stir from thence, untill a safe Harbour was discovered by them with their Boat: yea, it was sometimes threatned, that if they would not

Acts 28.

get a place in time, that they and their goods should be turned on shore, and that the Ship would leave them ; the Master expressing himself, that Provisions spent apace, and that he would keep sufficient for himself and his Company for their return. It is true indeed, that the love and affections of their Brethren they left behinde them in Holland, was cordial- and intire towards them, but they had little power to help them or themselves : what could now sustain them but the Spirit of God and his grace? Ought not, and may not the Children of these Fathers

Psal. 107. 1,2,
43558.

rightly say, *Our Fathers were English-men, which came over this great Ocean, and were ready to perish in this Wilderness ; but they cried unto the Lord, and he heard their voice, and looked on their adversity : Let them therefore praise the Lord, because he is good, and his mercy endureth for ever ; yea, let them who have been the redeemed of the Lord shew how he hath delivered them from the hand of the oppressor, when they wandred in the desert Wilderness out of the way, and found no City to dwell in ; both hungry and thirsty, their soul was overwhelmed in them : Let them therefore confess before the Lord his loving kindness, and his wonderful works before the children of men ?*

12. 11
Of the first Planters their Combination by entring into a Body Politick together ; With their proceedings in discovery of a place for their Settlement and Habitation.

Being thus fraudulently dealt with (as you have heard) and brought so farre to the Northward, the season being sharp, and no hopes of obtaining their intended Port ; and thereby their Patent being made void and uselesse as to another place : Being at Cape Cod upon the Eleventh of November 1620. it was thought meet for their more orderly carrying on of their Affairs, and accordingly by mutual consent they entred into a solemn Combination as a Body Politick, To submit to such Government and Governours, Laws and Ordinances, as should

by

by a general Consent from time to time be made choice of, and assented unto. The Contents whereof followeth.

IN the Name of God, Amen. We whose Names are under-written, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord King James, by the grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c. Having undertaken for the glory of God, and advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Countrey, a Voyage to plant the first Colony in the Northern parts of Virginia; Do by these Presents solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God and one another, Covenant and Combine our selves together into a Civil Body Politick, for our better ordering and preservation, and furtherance of the ends aforesaid: and by virtue hereof do enact, constitute and frame such just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Constitutions and Officers, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the Colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witness whereof we have hereunto subscribed our Names at Cape Cod, the eleventh of November, in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King James, of England, France and Ireland the eighteenth, and of Scotland the fifty fourth, Anno Dom. 1620.

This was the
first Foundation
of the Govern-
ment of New-
Plimouth.

John Carver.
William Bradford.
Edward Winslow.
William Brewster.
Isaac Allerton.
Miles Standish.
John Alden.

Samuel Fuller.
Christopher Martin.
William Mullins.
Richard Warren.
John Howland.
Steven Hopkins.

Edward Tilly.
John Tilly.
Francis Cook.
Thomas Rogers.
Thomas Tinker.
John Ridgdale.
Edward Fuller.

John

<i>John Turner.</i>	<i>Digery Priest.</i>	<i>Richard Clark.</i>
<i>Francis Eaton.</i>	<i>Thomas Williams.</i>	<i>Richard Gardiner.</i>
<i>James Chilton.</i>	<i>Gilbert Winslow.</i>	<i>John Allerton.</i>
<i>John Craxton.</i>	<i>Edmond Margeon.</i>	<i>Thomas English.</i>
<i>John Billington.</i>	<i>Peter Brown.</i>	<i>Edward Doten.</i>
<i>Josse Fletcher.</i>	<i>Richard Bitteridge.</i>	<i>Edward Lister.</i>
<i>John Goodman.</i>	<i>George Soule.</i>	

*Mr. John Carver
the first Gouernour
of the Jurisdiction of
New Plimouth*

After this, they chose Mr. *John Carver*, a man godly and well-approv'd amongst them, to be their Gouvernour for that year.

Necessity now calling them to look out a place for Habitation, as well as the Master and Mariners importunity urging them thereunto; while their Carpenter was trimming up of their Boat, sixteen of their men tendred themselves to go by land and discover those nearest places; which was accepted: and they being well armed, were sent forth on the sixteenth of November 1620. and having marched about a mile by the Seaside, they espied five Indians, who ran away from them, and they followed them all that day sundry miles, but could not come to speech with them: so night coming on, they betook themselves to their Rendezvouz, and set out their Sentinels, and rested in quiet that night; and the next morning they followed the Indians tracts, but could not finde them nor their dwellings, but at length lighted on a good quantity of clear ground near to a Pond of fresh water, where formerly the Indians had planted Indian Corn, at which place they saw sundry of their graves; and proceeding further, they found new Stubble where Indian Corn had been planted the same year; also they found where lately an house had been, where some Planks and a great Kettle was remaining, and heaps of sand newly paddled with their hands, which they digged up, and found in them divers fair Indian Baskets filled with Corn, some whereof was in Ears fair and good of divers colours, which seemed to them a very goodly sight, having seen none before: Of which Rarities they took some to carry to their friends on Shipboard, like as the

Israelites

Israelites Spies brought from *Ezel* some of the good fruits of the Land: but finding little that might make for their encouragement as to situation, they returned, being gladly received by the rest of their Company.

After this, their Shallop being ready, they set out the second time for a more full Discovery of this place, especially a place that seemed to be an opening as they went into the said Harbour some two or three Leagues off, which the Master judged to be a River; about thirty of them went out on this second Discovery, the Master of the Ship going with them: but upon the more exact discovery thereof, they found it to be no Harbour for Ships, but only for Boats. There they also found two of their Houses covered with Mats, and sundry of their Implements in them; but the people ran away, and could not be seen: Also there they found more of their Corn and Beams of various colours; the Corn and Beams they brought away, purposing to give them full satisfaction when they should meet with any of them. And here is to be noted, a special and a great mercy to this people, that here they got them seed to plant them Corn the next year, or otherwise they might have starved, for they had none, nor any likelihood to get any, untill the season had been past (as the sequel did manifest) neither is it likely that they had had this, if the first Discovery had not been made, for the ground was now all covered with Snow, and hard frozen; but the Lord is never wanting unto those that are his in their greatest needs. Let his holy Name have all the praise.

Having thus discovered this place, it was controverted amongst them what to do, touching their abode and settling there. Some thought it best for many Reasons to abide there:

1. Because of the Convenience of the Harbour for Boats, though not for Ships.

2. There was good Corn-ground ready to their hands, as was seen by experience in the goodly Corn it yielded, which would again agree with the ground, and be natural feed for the fine.

*About 6 months
after they gave
them full satis-
faction to their
content.*

*A special Pro-
vidence of God
to be noted.*

3. Cape Cod was like to be a place for good Fishing, for they saw daily great Whales of the best kinde for Oyl.

4. The place was likely to be healthful, secur, and defensible.

5. and lastly, The especial Reason was, that now the heart of Winter and unseafonable weather was come upon them, so as they could not go upon Coasting and Discovery, without danger of losing both men and Boat, upon which would follow the overthrow of all, especially considering what variable winds and sudden storms do there arise; also cold and wet lodging had so tainted their people, as scarce any of them were free from vehement Coughs, as if they should continue long, it would indanger the lives of many, and breed diseases & infection amongst them. Again, that as yet they had some Provisions, but they would quickly be spent, and then they should have nothing to comfort them in their labour and toyl that they were like to undergo. At the first it was also conceived, whiles they had comperent Victuals that the Ship would stay, but when that grew low, they would be gone, and let them shift for themselves.

Others again urged to go to Agawam, alias Angawam, a place about twenty Leagues off to the Northward, which they had heard to be an excellent Harbour for Ships, better ground, and better fishing.

Secondly, for any thing they knew there might be hard by us a farre better Seat, and it would be a great hinderance to seat where they should remove again.

But to omit many Reasons and Replies concerning this matter, it was in the end concluded to make some discovery within the Bay, but in no case so farre as Angawam. Besides, Robert Coppin their Pilot made relation of a great Navigable River, and good Harbour in the other Head-land of the Bay, almost right over against Cape Cod, being in a right line not much above eight Leagues distant, in which he had once been; and beyond that place they that were to go on discovery were enyoyned not to go.

The Month of November being spent on these Affairs, and having

*About this time
Mrs. Susanna
White was de-
livered of a Son
who was named
Peregrine; he
was the first of
the English that
was born in N.
E. and still sur-
viveth, & is the
Lieutenant of
the Military
Company of
Marlfield.*

having much foul weather ; on the sixth of December they concluded to send out their Shallop again on a third Discovery. The Names of those that went on this Discovery, were Mr. John Carver, Mr. William Bradford, Mr. Edward Winslow, Captain Miles Standiford, Mr. John Howland, Mr. Richard Warren, Mr. Steven Hopkins, Mr. Edward Tilly, Mr. John Tilly, Mr. Clark, Mr. Coppin, John Allerton, Thomas English, Edward Doten, with the Master Gunner of the Ship, and three other of the common Seamen ; these set sail on Wednesday the sixth of December 1620, intending to Circulate the deep Bay of Cape Cod, the weather being very cold, so as the Spray of the Sea lighting on their Coats, they were as if they had been glazed ; notwithstanding, that night they got down into the bottom of the Bay, and as they drew near the shore they saw some ten or twelve Indians, and landed about a League off them, (but with some difficulty, by reason of the Sholes in that place) where they tarried that night. In the morning they divided their Company to coast along, some on shore, and some in the Boat, where they saw the Indians had been the day before cutting up of a Fish like a Grampus ; and so they ranged up and down all that day, but found no people, nor any place they liked as fit for their settlement : and that night they on shore met with their Boat at a certain Creek, where they made them a Barricado of boughs and logs for their lodging that night, and being weary betook themselves to their rest. The next morning about five of the clock (seeking guidance and protection from God by prayer) and refreshing themselves in way of preparation to persist on in their intended Expedition, some of them carried their Arms down to the Boat, having laid them up in their Coats from the moisture of the weather ; but others said they would not carry theirs untill they went themselves : But presently all on a sudden, about the dawning of the day, they heard a great and strange cry, and one of their Company being on board, came hastily in, and cried, Indians, Indians, and withall their Arrows came flying amongst them ; on which, all their men ran with speed to recover their

*This is thought
to be a place
called Namske-
ker.*

Arms (as by Gods good Providence they did.) In the mean time, some of those that were ready discharged two Muskets at them, and two more stood ready at the entrance of their Rendezvouz, but were commanded not to shooe, untill they could take full aim at them ; and the other two charged again with all speed, for there were onely four that had Arms there, and defended the Barricado which was first assaulted. The cry of the Indians was dreadful, especially when they saw their men run out of their Rendezvouz towards the Shallop to recover their Arms ; the Indians wheeling about upon them : but some running out with Coats of Mail, and Cuttle-axes in their hands, they soon recovered their Arms, and discharged amongst them, and soon stayed their violence. Notwithstanding, there was a lusty man, and no les valiant, stood behinde a Tree within half a Musket shot, and let fly his Arrows amongst them : he was seen to shoot three Arrows, which were all avoided, and stood three shot of a Musket, untill one taking full aim at him, made the Bark or Splinters of the Tree fly about his ears ; after which he gave an extraordinary shriek, and away they went all of them : and so leaving some to keep the Shallop, they followed them about a quarter of a mile, that they might conceive that they were not afraid of them, or any way discouraged.

*This place on
this occasion
was called, the
first Encoun-
ter.*

Thus it pleased God to vanquish their Enemies, and to give them deliverance, and by his special Providence so to dispose, that not any one of them was either hurt or hit, though their Arrows came close by them ; and sundry of their Coats which hung up in the Barricado were shot through and through : for which salvation and deliverance they rendered solemn Thanks-giving unto the Lord.

From hence they departed, and coasted all along, but discerned no place likely for Harbour, and therefore hasted to the place their Pilot (as aforesaid) told them of, who assured them that there was a good Harbour, and they might fetch it before night : of which they were glad, for it began to be foul weather.

After some hours sailing it began to Snow and Rain, and about

about the middle of the Afternoon the wind increased, and the Sea became very rough, and they brake their Rudder, and it was as much as two men could do to steer the Boat with a couple of Oars; but the Pilot bid them be of good cheer, for he saw the Harbour: but the storm increasing, and night drawing on, they bare what sail they could to get in while they could see: but herewith they brake their Mast in three pieces, and their Sail fell over-board in a very grown Sea, so as they had like to have been cast away; yet by Gods mercy they recovered themselves, and having the flood with them, struck into the Harbour. But when it came to, the Pilot was deceived in the place, and said, *Lord be merciful to us, my eyes never saw this place before:* and he and the Masters Mate would have run the Boat ashore in a Cove full of Breakers before the wind, but a lusty Seaman which steered bade them that rowed, *If they were men, about with her, else they were all cast away;* the which they did with all speed: so he bade them be of good cheer, and row hard, for there was a fair Sound before them, and he doubted not but they should finde one place or other where they might ride in safety. And although it was very dark, and rained sore, yet in the end they got under the lee of a small Island, and remained there all hight in safety. But they knew not this to be an Island untill the next morning, but were divided in their mindes, some would keep the Boat, doubting they might be amongst the Indians, others were so wet and cold they could not endure, but got on shore, and with much difficulty got fire; and so the whole were refreshed, and rested in safety that night. The next day rendring thanks to God for his great deliverance of them, and his continued merciful good Providence towards them, and finding this to be an Island, it being the last day of the week, they resolved to keep the Sabbath there.

On the second day of the week following they sounded the Harbour, and found it fit for Shipping, and marched into the Land, and found divers Corn fields, and little running Brooks, a place (as they supposed) fit for Situation, at least it was the best that they could finde, and the season and their present ne-

This was between the place called the Gurnets Nose and Saganquab, by the mouth of Plimouth harbour.

This was afterwards called Clarks Island, because Mr. Clark the Masters Mate first stepped on shore thereon.

cessity made them glad to accept of it. So they returned again to their Ship with this News to the rest of their people, which did much comfort their hearts.

On the fifteenth of December they weighed Anchor, to go to the place they had discovered, and arrived the sixteenth day in the Harbour they had formerly discovered, and afterward took better view of the place; and resolved where to pitch their Dwellings; and on the Five and twentieth day of December began to erect the first House for common use, to receive them and their goods: and after they had provided a place for their goods and common store (which was long in unlading for want of Boats, and by reason of foulness of the winter weather, and sicknes of divers) they began to build some small Cottages for Habitation, as time would admit; and also consulted of Laws and Orders both for their Civil and Military Government, as the necessity of their present condition did require. But that which was sad and lamentable, that in two or three Moneths time half of their Company died, especially in January and February, being the depth of Winter, wanting houses and other comforts, being infected with the Scurvy, and other Diseases, which this long Voyage and their incommodate condition had brought upon them, so as there died sometimes two, sometimes three on a day in the aforesaid time, that of One hundred and odde persons, scarce Fifty remained. Amongst others in the time fore-named, died Mr. *William Mullins*, a man pious and well-deserving, endowed also with a considerable outward Estate; and had it been the will of God that he had survived, might have proved an useful Instrument in his place, with several others who deceased in this great and common affliction, whom I might take notice of to the like effect. Of those that did survive in this time of distress and calamity that was upon them, there was sometimes but six or seven found persons, who (to their great commendation be it spoken) spared no pains night nor day to be helpful to the rest, nor shunning to do very mean ser vices to help the weak and impotent. In which Sicknes the Seamen shared also deeply, and many

many died, to about the one half of them before they went away. Thus being but few, and very weak, this was an opportunity for the Salvages to have made a prey of them, who were wont to be the most cruel and treacherous people in all these parts, even like Lions; but to them they were as Lambs, God striking a dread in their hearts, so as they received no harm from them. The Lord also so disposed, as aforesaid, much to waste them by a great Mortality, together with which were their own Civil Dissentions, and Bloody Wars, so as the twentieth person was scarce left alive when these people arrived, there remaining sad spectacles of that Mortality in the place where they seated, by many bones and skulls of the dead lying above-ground; whereby it appeared, that the living of them were not able to bury their dead. Some of the ancient Indians that are surviving at the writing hereof, do affirm, That about some two or three years before the first English here arrived, they saw a *Blazing Star* or *Comet*, which was a fore-runner of this sad Mortality, for soon after it came upon them in extremity. Thus God made way for his people, by removing the Heathen, and planting them in the Land; yet we hope in mercy to some of the posterity of these poor blinde Salvages, by being means (at least stepping-stones) for others to come and Preach the Gospel amongst them: of which afterwards in its more proper place. But to return.

The Indians after their arrival would shew themselves afarre off; but when they endeavoured to come near them, they would run away. But about the sixteenth of March, 1621. a certain Indian called Samoet came boldly amongst them, and spake to them in broken English, which yet they could well understand; at which they marvelled: but at length they understood that he belonged to the Eastern parts of the Country, and had acquaintance with sundry of the English Fishermen, and could name sundry of them, from whom he learned his language. He became very profitable to them, in acquainting them with many things concerning the state of the Country in the Eastern parts, as also of the people here; of their Names,

Num.

Prayve
1618.

*This seemeth to
be the same that
was seen about
that time in
Europe.*

Number, and Strength, of their Situation, and Distance from this place, and who was Chief amongst them : He told them also of another Indian called *Squanto*, alias *Sisquantam*, one of this place, who had been in *England*, and could speak better English then himself : And after courteous entertainment of him, he was dismissed. Afterwards he came again, with some other Natives, and told them of the coming of the great *Sachem* named *Massasoit*, who (about four or five dayes after) came with the chief of his Friends and other Attendants, with the aforesaid *Squanto*, with whom (after friendly entertainment and some gifts given him) they made a League of Peace with him, which continued with him and his Successors to the time of the writing hereof. The terms and Conditions of the said League is as followeth :

Of this see
more in the year
1639.

- I. **T**HAT neither he, nor any of his, should injure or do hurt to any of their people.
- II. **T**HAT if any of his did any hurt to any of theirs, he should send the Offender that they might punish him.
- III. **T**HAT if any thing were taken away from any of theirs, he should cause it to be restored ; and they should do the like to his.
- IV. **T**HAT if any did unjustly War against him, they would aid him ; and if any did War against them, he should aid them.
- V. **T**HAT he should send to his Neighbour-Confederates, to certify them of this, that they might not wrong them, but might be likewise comprised in these Conditions of Peace.
- VI. **T**HAT when his Men came to them upon any occasion, they should leave their Arms (which were then Bowes and Arrows) behinde them.
- VII. **L**ASTLY, **T**HAT so doing, their Sovereign Lord King James would esteem him as His Friend and Ally.

All which he liked well, and withall at the same time acknowledged himself content to become the Subject of our Sovereign Lord the King aforesaid, His Heirs and Successors ; and gave unto them all the Lands adjacent, to them and their Heirs for ever.

After

After these things he returned to his place called *Sowams*, about fourty miles distant from *Plimouth*, but *Squanto* continued with them, and was their Interpreter, and proved a special Instrument sent of God for their good-beyond expectation; he directed them in Planting their Corn, where to take their Fish, and to procure their Commodity; and also was their Pilot to bring them to unknown places for their profit, and never left them untill his death: He was a Native of this place where *Plimouth* is, and scarce any left besides himself. He was carried away (with divers others) by one named *Hunt*, a Master of a Ship, who thought to sell them for Slaves in *Spain*, but he got away for *England*, and was entertained by a Merchant in *London*, and employed to *Newfound-land* and other parts; and at last brought hither into these parts by one Mr. *Dermer*, a Gentleman employed by Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* and others, for Discovery, and other Designs in these parts: of whom I shall say something, because it is mentioned in a Book set forth Anno 1622. by the President and Council for *New-England*, That he made the Peace between the *Salvages* of these parts and the English, of which this *Plantation* (as it is intimated) had the benefit: and what a Peace it was, may appear by what befell him and his men.

This Mr. *Dermer* was here the same year that these people came, as appears by a Relation written by him, bearing date June 30. Anno 1620. and they arrived in the Country in the Month of November following, so that there was but four Months difference: In which Relation to his honoured Friend, he hath these passages of this very place where *New-Plimouth* is; I will first begin (saith he) with that place from whence *Squanto*, or *Tisquantum* was taken away, which in Captain Smiths Map is called * *Plimouth*, and I wold that *Plimouth* had the like Commodities. I would that the first *Plantation* might here be seated, if there come to the number of Fifty persons, or upwards; otherwise at *Charlton*, because there the *Salvages* are less to be feared. The *Pocanakets*, which live to the West of *Plimouth*, bear an inveterate malignity to the English, and are of

*This Merchants
name was Mr.
Slaney.*

* This name of *Plimouth* was so called not only for the reaon here named, but also because *Plimouth* in O.E. was the last town they left in their Native country; & for that they received many kindnesses from some Christians there.

Note.

more strength then all the Salvages from thence to Panobskut: Their desire of Revenge was occasioned by an English-man, who having many of them on Board, made great slaughter of them with their Murderers and small Shot, when (as they say) they offered no injury on their parts. Whether they were English or no, it may be doubted; yet they believe they were, for the French have so possest them: for which cause Squanto cannot deny but they would have killed me when I was at Namassaket, had he not intreated hard for me. The Soyl of the Borders of this great Bay, may be compared to most of the Plantations which I have seen in Virginia. The land is of divers sorts; for Patukset is an heavy but strong Soyl, Naulet and Satukket are for the most part a blackish and deep Mould, much like that where groweth the best Tobacco in Virginia. In the bottom of the Bay is great store of Cod, Bass or Mullet, &c. And above all, he commends Pacannaket for the richest Soyl, and much open ground, likely and fit for English Grain. Massachusets is about nine leagues from Plimouth, and situate in the mids: between both is many Islands and Peninsuls, very fertile for the most part. With sundry such Relations, which I forbear to transcribe, being now better known then they were to him.

This Gentleman was taken Prisoner by the Indians at Manamofset, (a place not farre from Plimouth, now well known) he gave them what they demanded for his liberty; but when they had got what they desired, they kept him still, and endeavoured to kill some of his men, but he was freed by seizing on some of them, and kept them bound till they gave him a Canoos load of Corn: Of which see Purch. lib. 9. fol. 1778. But this was Anno 1619.

Now called
Martins Vine-
yard.

After the writing of the former Relation, he came to the Isle Capewak, which lieth South from this place in the way to Virginia, and the aforesaid Squanto with him; where he going on shore amongst the Indians to trade, as he used to do, was assaulted and betrayed by them, and all his men slain, but one that kept the Boat: but himselfe got on Board very sore wounded, and they had cut off his Head upon the Cuddy of the Boat;

had

had not his Man rescued him with a Sword, and so they got away, and made Shift to get into *Virginia*, where he died, whether of his wounds, or the Diseases of the Country, or both, is uncertain. By all which it may appear how farre this people were from Peace, and with what danger this Plantation was begun, save as the powerful hand of the Lord did protect them.

These things were partly the Reasons why the *Indians* kept aloof, as aforesaid, and that it was so long ere they could come to speech with any of them : Another Reason (as afterwards themselves made known) was, how that about three years before these first Planters arrived, a certain French Ship was cast away at *Cape Cod*, but the men got on shore, and saved their lives, and much of their Victuals and other goods ; but afterwards the *Indians* heard of it, and gathered together from these parts, and never left watching and dogging them, untill they got advantage, and kill'd them all but three or four, which they kept and sent from one *Sachem* to another to make sport with them, and used them worse then Slaves ; and they conceived this Ship was now come to revenge it. Two of the said French so used were redeemed by the aforesaid Mr. *Dermer*, the other died amongst the *Indians* : and as the *Indians* have reported, one of them lived amongst them untill he was able to discourse with them, and told them; *That God was angry with them for their wickedness, and would destroy them, and give their Country to another people, that should not live like beasts as they did, but should be clothed, &c.* But they derided him, and said; *That they were so many that God could not kill them.* His answer was, *That though they were never so many, God had many wyes to destroy them that they knew not.* Shortly after his death came the Plague, a Disease they never heard of before, and mightily swept them away, and left them as dung upon the earth (as you have heard.) Not long after came the English to *New-Plimouth*, and then several of the *Indians* began to minde the French-mans words, thinking him to be more then an ordinary man. And as the first part of his speech had proved true, they began to be

A memorable
passage of Gods
punishing of the
Indians for
their notorious
blasphemy, and
other sins.

be apprehensive of the latter, *viz. The less of their Country*: This Relation the first Planters at *Plimouth*, after they came to be acquainted with them, several of them heard from divers of their ancient and gravest *Indians*, and have often seen the place where the *French* were surprised and taken; which place beareth the Name of *Frenchmans Point* with many to this day. This Relation for the verity thereof, being also very observable, was thought meet to be here inserted: And let me adde a word hereunto; That it is very observable likewise, That God hath very evidently made way for the *English*, by sweeping away the Natives by some great Mortalities; as first; by the *Plague* here in *Plimouth Jurisdiction*; secondy, by the *Small Pox* in the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts*, a very considerable people a little before the *English* came into the Country; as also at *Conecticot*, very full of *Indians* a little before the *English* went into those parts; and then the *Pequots* by the Sword of the *English* (as will appear in its place) and the Country now mostly possessed by the *English*. I might also mention several places in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*; peopled with considerable companies of proper able men; since the first Planters thereof came over, even in our sight; before they were in a capacity to improve any of their land, that have by the same hand of Providence been cut off, and so their Land even cleared for them, and now so replenished with their posterity, that places are too strait for them. *By little and little* (saith God of old to his people) *will I drive them out from before thee, till thou be increased, and inherit the Land.*

Exod 23, 28, 29, 30.

But before I passe on, let the Reader take notice of a very remarkable particular; which was made known to the said Planters at *Plimouth* some short space after their arrival, That the *Indians*; before they came to the *English* to make Friendship with them, they got all the *Powaws* in the Country, who for three dayes together in a horrid and devilish manner did Curse and Execrate them with their Conjurations: which Assembly and Service they held in a dark and dismal Swamp. But to return,

Bold how Sitan laboured to hinder the Gospel from coming into N.E.

The Spring being now come, it pleased God that the Mortality which had taken away so many of the first Planters at *Plimouth*, ceas'd, and the Sick and Lame recovered apace, which was as it were a new life put into them; they having born this Affliction with much patience, being upheld by the Lord. And thus we are come unto the Twenty fifth of *March, 1621.*

I 6 2 I.

THIS Year several of the *Indian Sachems* (besides *Massasoiet* before-named) came unto the Government of *New-Plimouth*, and acknowledged themselves to be the Loyal Subjects of our Sovereign Lord King *James*, and subscribed unto a Writing to that purpose with their own hands; the tenour of which said Writing followeth, with their Names annexed thereto. It being conceived by some that are judicious, that it may be of use in succeeding times, I thought meet here to insert it.

September 13. Anno Dom. 1621.

KNOW all men by these Presents, That we whose Names are under-written do acknowledge ourselves to be the Loyal Subjects of King *James*, King of Great Britain, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. In Witness whereof, and as a Testimonial of the same, we have Subscribed our Names or Marks, as followeth.

Ohquamehud.
Cawnacome.
Obbatinnua.

Nattawahunt.
Caunbatant.
Chikkasabak.

Quadaquina.
Huttamoiden.
Apannow.

Now

*Now followeth several Passages of the Providence of God to,
and the further progress of the first Planters at Plim-
outh, appertaining to the Year 1621.*

*1670
1621
1620*
They now began to hasten the Ship away, which tarried so long by reason of the necessity and danger that lay on them, because so many died both of themselves, and the Ships Company likewise; by which they became so few, as the Master durst not put out to Sea, untill those that lived recovered of their Sicknes, and the Winter over.

The Spring of this year they Planted their first Corn in New England, being instructed in the manner thereof by the fore-named Squanto: they likewise sowed some English Grain with little success, by reason partly of the badnes of the Seed, and latenesse of the season, or some other defect not then discerned.

In the Month of April in this year, their Governour Mr. John Carver fell sick, and within a few dayes after died, whose death was much lamented, and caused great heaviness amongst them; and there was indeed great cause. He was buried in the best manner they could, with as much Solemnity as they were in a capacity to perform, with the Discharge of some Volleys of shot of all that bare Arms. This worthy Gentleman was one of singular Piety, and rare for Humility, as appeared by his great condescendency, when as this poor miserable people were in great sickness and weakness, he shunned not to do very mean services for them, yea the meanest of them: He bare a share likewise of their labour in his own person, accordingly as their extreme necessity required; who being one also of a considerable Estate, spent the main part of it in this Enterprize, and from first to last approved himself not onely as their Agent in the first transacting of things, but also all along to the period of his life, to be a pious, faithful, and very beneficial Instrument, and now is reaping the fruit of his labour with the Lord. His

His Wife who was also a gracious woman, lived not six weeks after him : shee being overcome with excessive grief for the los of so gracious an Husband, likewise died.

In some short distance of time after this, Mr. *William Bradford* was chosen Governoour of *Plimouth* in his stead, being not as yet well recovered of his weaknes, having bin at the point of death, and Mr. *Isaac Allerton* likewise was chosen to be his Assitant.

The second of *July* in this year they sent Mr. *Edward Winslow* and Mr. *Steven Hopkins*, unto the great Sachem *Massasoit* aforeaid, with a gratuitie to congratulate with him, and to view his Country, and likewise to take notice of what strength of men he had, &c. having *Squanto* for their guide : who found his place to be about forty Miles from *New-Plimouth*, his People few in comparison of what they had been, by reason of the mortality amongst the *Indians* forementioned. These brought word upon their return of the *Narragansets*, a People that li-
ved on the other side of that great Bay, which are a People strong and many in number, living compact together, and had not at all been touched with the wasting Plague before-specified. They also brought a full intelligence in reference unto the par-
ticulars they were sent about, and so returned in safety.

Thus their peace being well established with the *Natives* about them, which was much furthered by an *Indian* named *Hobamak*, who came to live amongst the *English*; he being a proper lusty young man, and one that was in account amongst the *Indians* in those parts for his valour, continued faithful and constant to the *English* until his death. He with the said *Squanto* being sent amongst the *Indians* about busines for the *English*, were surprised by an *Indian Sachem* named *Corbitant*, who was no friend to the *English*; he met with them at *Nanassaker*, and began to quarrel with them, and offered to stab *Hobamak*, who being a strong man, soon cleared himself of him; and with speed came and gave intelligence to the Governoour of *Plimouth*, saying, he feared that *Squanto* was slain; for they were both threatned, and for no other cause, but that they were friends to the *English*, and serviceable to them. On which it was thought meet

meet to vindicate their Messengers, and not to suffer them to be thus wronged, and it was concluded to send some men to *Namassaket* well armed, and to fall upon them: whereupon fourteen men being well prepared were sent, under the conduct of Captain *Miles Standish*, who when they came thither beset the house, and the said Captain entred into the same to look for the said *Corbitant*, but he was fled, and so they missed of him; but understood that *Squanto* was alive; so they withheld, and did no hurt, save three of the *Natives* pressing out of the house when it was beset, were sorely wounded; which they brought home to their Town with them, and were dressed by their Chirurgion, and cured.

After this they had many Congratulations from divers *Sachems*, and much firmer peace, yea those of the Isle of *Capewak* sent to make friendship with them, and this *Corbitant* himself used the mediation of *Massasoit* to make his peace, but was shie to come near them a long time after.

After this, on the eighteenth of September they sent out their Boat to the *Massachusetts* with ten men, and *Squanto* for their Interpreter, to discover and view that Bay, and to trade with the *Natives*; and found kinde entertainment with them, who expressed themselves to be much afraid of the *Tarateens*, a people in the Eastern part of *New-England*, which used to come in Harvest time and take away their corn, and many times kill some of their people; who after they had accomplished their busyness, returned in safety, and made report of the place, wishing they had been there seated. But the Lord who assigns to all men the bounds of their habitations, had appointed it for another end and use.

And thus they found the Lord to be with them in all their wayes, and to bless their out-goings and in-comings: for which let his holy Name have the praise for ever.

Being now well recovered in respect of health (as hath been said) they began to fit up their buildings against winter, and received in their first harvest, and had great plenty of fowl and fish, to their great refreshing.

About

About the ninth of November came in a small ship to them unexpected, in which came Mr. Robert Cushman, who was both a godly man and an active and faithful agent, and useful instrument in the common interest of this first design; and there came with him in that ship, thirty five persons, to remain and live in the Plantation: which did not a little rejoice the first planters. And these when they came on shore, and found all well, and saw plenty of provisions beyond their expectation, were also satisfied and no less glad: for coming in at Cape Cod before they came to Plimouth, and seeing nothing there but a barren place; they then began to think what should become of them, if the People were dead or cut off by the Indians; and began to consult upon some passages, which some of the Seamen had cast out, to take the Sails from the Yard, lest the ship should get away and leave them: but the Master hearing thereof, gave them good words, and told them, *If any thing but well should have befallen the People at Plimouth, he hoped he had provisions enough to carry them to Virginia, and whiles he had any, they should have their part;* which gave them good satisfaction.

This ship stayed at Plimouth not above fourteen dayes, and returned; and soon after her departure, the People called the Narragansets aforesaid, sent a messenger unto the Plantation, with a bundle of Arrows, tyed together with a Snakes skin, which their Interpreter Squanto told them was a threatening and a challenge; upon which the Gouvernour of Plimouth sent them a rough answer, (*viz.*) *That if they loved war rather than peace, they might begin when they would, they had done them no wrong, neither did they fear them, or should they finde them unprovided:* and by another Messenger sent the Snakes skin back again with Bullets in it, but they would not receive it, but sent it back again. It is probable the reason of this their Message to the English, was their own ambition, who since the death of so many Indians, thought to domineer and lord it over the rest, and conceived the English would be a barre in their way, and saw that Massasoit took shelter already under their wings; but this made the English more carefully to look to themselves,

*This ship was
called the Fortune,
in which
came no Provi-
sions, which was
one cause of a
great famine
that befell the
Plantation of
NewPlimouth
soon after.*

so as they agreed to close their Dwellings with a good strong Pale; and made Flankers in convenient places, with Gates to shut, which were every night locked, and a Watch kept, and when need required there was also Warding in the day time; and the Company was by the Governour and Captains advice, divided into four Squadrons, and every one had their quarter appointed them, unto which they were to repair: and if there should be any cry of Fire, a Company was appointed for a Guard with Muskets, whiles others quenched the Fire; the same to prevent Indian Treachery. And herewith I shall end the Passages of this Year.

I 6 2 2.

AT the Spring of this Year (the *English* having certified the *Indians* of the *Massachusetts*; that they would come again unto them) they accordingly prepared to go thither; but upon some rumours which they heard from *Hobamak*, their friend fore-named, who feared that the *Massachusetts* were joyned with the *Narragansets*, and might betray them if they were not careful; and intimated also his jealousies of *Squanto*, by what he gathered from some private whisperings between him and other *Indians*, that he was not really cordial to the *English*, in what he pretended, made them cautious. Notwithstanding, they sent out their Boat with ten of their principal men about the beginning of April, and both *Squanto* and *Hobamak* with them, in regard of the jealousie between them: but they had not been gone long, ere that an *Indian* belonging to *Squanto's* family came running, seeming to be in great fear, and told them that many of the *Narragansets*, with *Corbitant*, (and he thought *Massasoit*) was coming against them: At which they betook them to their Arms, and supposing that the Boat was not as yet out of call, they caused a Piece of Ordinance to be discharged, to call them in again: But this proved other-

otherwise, for no Indians came. After this they went to the Massachusetts, and had good Trade, and returned in safety, God be praised.

But by the former passages and things of like nature, they began to see that Squanto sought his own ends, and played his own game, by putting the Indians in fear, and drawing gifts from them to enrich himself; making them believe he could stir up war against them when he would, and make peace for them when he would; yea he made them believe, that the English kept the Plague buried in the ground; and could send it amongst whom they would, which did much terrifie the Indians; and made them more depend on him, and seek more to him than to their great Sachem Massasoiet; which procured him envy, and had like to have cost him his life; for after the discovery of these practices, the said Massasoiet sought it both privately and openly; which caused him to stick close to the English, and never after durst go from them until his death. They also made good use of the emulation that grew between Hobamak and him, which made them both carry more squarely; and the Governoour seemed to countenance this one, and their Captain the other; by which they had the better intelligence, and it made them both the more diligent.

About the latter end of May they espied a vessel at sea, which at the first they thought to be a French-man, but it proved one that belonged to Mr. Thomas Weston a Merchant; which came from a ship which he and another had sent out on fishing to a place called Damarels Cove, in the Eastern parts of N. E. this boat brought seven men, and some letters, but no provisions to them, of which they were in continual expectation from England, which expectations were frustrated in that behalf; for they never had any supply to any purpose after this time, but what the Lord helped them to raise by their industry amongst themselves: for all that came afterwards was too short for the passengers that came with it.

After this the same year, the above-named Mr. Thomas Weston, who had formerly been one of the Merchant-adven-

*This was said
to be a barrel of
Gun-powder
buried in the
ground.*

The one named
the Sparrow,
the other the
Charity.

turers to the Plantation of *New-Plimouth* (but had now broken off and deserted the general concerns thereof) sent over two ships on his own particular interest; in the one of them came sixty lusty men, who were to be put on shore at *Plimouth*, for the ship was to go with other passengers to *Virginia*; these were courteously entertained (with the seven men fore-named belonging to the said *Weston*, at *Plimouth* aforesaid) until the ship returned from *Virginia*, which was the most part of that Summer; many of them being sick, and all of them destitute of habitation, and unacquainted with this new beginning: at the ships return from *Virginia*, by the direction of the said Mr. *Weston* their Master, or such as he had set over them, they removed into the *Massachusetts Bay*, he having got a Patent for some part there, yet they left all their sick folk at *Plimouth*, until they were settled and fitted for housing to receive them: These were an unruly company, and had no good government over them, and by disorder fell into many wants, as afterwards will appear.

But before I pass on, I may not omit the mentioning of a courteous Letter that came in the vessel above-named, in which the above-said seven men came, being directed to the Governor of *Plimouth*, with respect unto the whole *Plantation*, from a Captain of a ship at the Eastward, who came thither on a fishing voyage; the which for the ingenuity of the man, and his courtesie therein expressed, may not unlily be here inserted, being inscribed as followeth:

To all his good Friends at *Plimouth*.

Friends, Country-men and Neighbours, I salute you, and wish you all health and happiness in the Lord: I make bold with these few lines to trouble you, because, unless I were inhumane, I can do no less. Bad news doth spread it self too far, yet I will so far inform, that myself with many good friends in the South Colony of *Virginia* have received such a blow, that four hundred persons large will not make good our losses. Therefore I do intreat you, altho

not

not knowing you, that the oldrule which I learned when I went to school, may be sufficient; what is, happy is he who other mens harms doth make to beware; and now again and again, wishing all those that willingly would serve the Lord, all health and happiness in this world, and everlasting peace in the world to come:

I rest, yours

JOHN HUDSTON.

In the same Vessel the Governoour returned a thankful Answer, as was meet, and sent a Boat of their own with them, which was piloted by them; in which Mr. Edward Winflow was sent to procure what Provisions he could of the Ship, who was kindly received by the aforesaid Gentleman, who not onely spared what he could, but wrote to others to do the like: by which means the Plantation had a good quantity of Provisions.

This Summer they built a Fort with good Timber, both strong and comely, which was of good defence, made with a flat Roof; and Battlements; on which Fort their Ordnance were mounted, and where they kept constant Watch, especially in time of danger: It served them also for a Meeting-house, and was fitted accordingly for that use. It was a great Work for them to do in their weakness, and times of want; but the danger of the time required it, there being continual rumours of the Indians, and fears of their rising against them, especially the Narragansets; and also the hearing of that great and sad Massacre in Virginia above-named.

It may not here be omitted, that notwithstanding all their great pains and industry, and the great hopes they had of a large Crop, the Lord seemed to threaten them with more and sorser Famine by a great Drought, which continued from the third week in May, untill the middle of July, without any Rain, and with great heat of Weather for the most part, insomuch as their Corn began to wither away, although it was planted

Although this was not much amongt them all, yet it was a very seasonable blessing and supply, they being now in a low condition for want of food.

with Fish, according to their usual manner in those times ; yet at length it began to languish sore, and some of the dryer grounds was parched like withered Hay, part whereof was never recovered. Upon which they set apart a solemn Day of Humiliation, to seek the Lord by humble and fervent Prayer in this great distress : and he was pleased to give them a gracious and speedy answer, both to their own and the Indians admiration that lived amongst them ; for all the morning, and greatest part of the day, it was clear weather, and very hot, and not a Cloud nor any sign of Rain to be seen, yet towards evening it began to overcast, and shortly after to Rain, with such sweet and gentle showers, as gave them cause of rejoicing and blessing God : it came without either Wind or Thunder, or any violence, and by degrees in that abundance, as that the Earth was throughly wet, and soaked therewith, which did so apparently revive and quicken the decayed Corn and other Fruits, as was wonderful, and made the Indians astonished to behold. A little before the Lord sent this Rain of Liberalities upon his people, one of them having occasion to go to the house of the afore-named Hobamak the Indian, he the said

The person that made this Relation is still surviving, and a principal man in the Jurisdiction of Newr Plimouth.

Hobamak said unto him, *I am much troubled for the English, for I am afraid they will lose all their Corn by the Droughe, and so they will be all starved ; as for the Indians, they can shift better than the English, for they can get Fish to help themselves.* But afterwards the same man having occasion to go again to his house, he said to him, *Now I see that the English-mans God is a good God, for he hath heard you, and sent you Rain, and that without Storms, and Tempests, and Thunder, which usually we have with our Rain, which breaks down our Corn, but your stands whole and good still ; surely your God is a good God : or with words to the like effect.*

And after this gracious return of Prayers in this so seasonable a blessing of the Rain, the Lord sent them such seasonable showers, with interchange of warm weather, as (through his blessing) caused in its time a fruitful and liberal Harvest, to their great Comfort and Rejoycing : for which Mercy, in time

time convenient, they also solemnized a Day of Thanksgiving unto the Lord.

Now the welcome Harvest approached, in the which all had some refreshment, but it arose but to a little in comparison of a whole years supply; partly by reason they were not yet well acquainted with the manner of the Husbandry of the Indian Corn, (having no other) and also their many other Employments; but chiefly their weakness for want of food, so as to appearance Famine was like to ensue, if not some way prevented: Markets there was none to go unto, but onely the Indians; but they had no Trading-stuff. But behold now another Providence of God; A Ship came into the Harbour, one Captain Jones being chief in her, set out by some Merchants to discover all the Harbours between Cape Cod and Virginia, and to Trade along the Coast. This Ship had store of English Beads, (which were then good trade) and some Knives, but would sell none but at dear rates, and also a good quantity together; yet they were glad of the occasion, and fain to buy at any rate: they were fain to give after the rate of Cent. per Cent. if not more, and yet pay away Coat-Beaver at three shillings per pound. By this means they were fitted again to trade for Beaver and other things, and so procured what Corn they could.

Another good providence of God tending to their relief.

But here let me take liberty to make a little digression: There was in the Ship sent by Mr. Weston fore-named (in which his Men came) a Gentleman named Mr. John Porey; he had been Secretary in Virginia, and was now going home Passenger in this Ship. After his departure he wrote a Letter to the Gouvernor of Plimouth, in the Postscript whereof he hath these expressions following:

"To your self and Mr. Brewster I must humbly acknowledge
"my self many wayes indebted, whose Books I would have you
"think very well bestowed, who esteems them such Jewels. My
"haste would not suffer me to remember, much less to beg Mr.
"Ainsworths elaborate Work on the five Books of Moses; both
"his and Mr. Robinsons do highly commend the Authors, as being
"most

"most conversant in the Scriptures of all others: and what good
"who knows it may please God to work by them through my hands,
"though most unworthy, who finde such high content in them. God
"have you all in his keeping."

August 28.

1622.

Your unfeigned and firm Friend,

JOHN POREY.

These things I here insert, partly for the honours sake of the Authors memory, which this Gentleman doth so ingenuously acknowledge, and also the credit and good that he procured unto the Plantation of Plimouth after his return, and that amongst those of no mean Rank. But to return.

Mr. Westons people fore-named, who were now seated in the Bay of the Massachusets, at a place called by the Indians Wesagusquaset, and by disorder (as it seemed) had made havock of their Provision, they began now to conceive that want would come upon them; and hearing that their Neighbours at Plimouth had bought Trading-stuff, as aforesaid, and intended to Trade for Corn, they wrote to the Governour, and desired that they might joyn with them, and they would imploy their small Ship in this service; and also requested to lend or sell them so much of their Trading-stuff as their part might come to: which was agreed unto on equal terms; so they went out in the Expedition, with an intention to go about Cape Cod to the Southwards, but meeting with croſſ Winds, and other Croſſes, went in at Mannamoik, where the aforesaid Squanto, being their Guide and Interpreter, fell ſick, and within a few dayes died: A little before his death, he desired the Governour of Plimouth (who then was there) to pray for him, that he might go to the English-mans God in Heaven; and bequeathed divers of his things to ſundry of his English Friends, as Remembrances of his love: of whom they had a great losſ.

Here they got a conſiderable quantity of Corn, and ſo returned.

Now by the En-
glish called
Weymouth.

Squanto's
Death.

turned. After these things John Sanders, who was left chief over Mr. Westons men at Wesagusquaset, in the Month of February sent a Messenger, shewing the great wants they were fallen into, and would have borrowed Corn of the Indians, but they would lend him none; and desired advice whether he might take it from them by force to succour his men, untill return from the Eastward, whither he was now going. But the Governour and the rest dissuaded him by all means from it, for it might so exasperate the Indians, as might endanger their safety, and all of them might smart for it: for they had already heard how they had wronged the Indians, by stealing their Corn, &c. so as the Natives were much incensed against them: yea, so base were some of their own Company, as they went and told the Indians, that their governour was purposed to come and take their Corn by force, which with other things made them enter into a Conspiracy against the English. And herewith I end the Relation of the most Remarkable Passages of Gods Providence towards the first Planters, which fell out in this Year.

1 6 2 3.

M R. Westons people fore-named, notwithstanding all helps they could procure for supply of Provisions, fell into great Extremity, which was occasioned by their excessive expence while they had it, or could get it; and after they came into want, many sold away their Clothes and Bed-coverings; others were so base as they became servants to the Indians, and would cut them Wood, and fetch them Water for a Cap full of Corn; others fell to stealing both night and day from the Indians, of which they grievously complained. In the end they came to that misery, that some starved and died with hunger; and one in gathering of Shell-fish was so weak, as he stuck fast in the mud, and was found dead in the place; and

most of them left their Dwellings, and were scattered up and down in the Woods by the Water-side, where they could finde Ground-nuts and Clams, here six, and there ten, by which their carriages they became contemned and scorned of the Indians, insomuch as they began greatly to insult over them in a most insolent manner, so as if they had set on such Victuals as they had gotten to dress it, when it was ready the Indians would come and eat it up: and when Night came, when as possibly some of them had a sorry Blanket, or such like, to lap themselves in, the Indians would take it, and let the other lye all night in the cold, so as their condition was very lamentable; and in the end they were fain to hang one of their Company, whom they could not reclaim from stealing, to give the Indians content.

Whiles things went on in this manner with them, the Governnour and People of Plimouth had notice that the Sachem Massasoiet their Friend was sick, and near unto death, and they sent to visit him, and sent him some comfortable things, which gave him content, and was a means of his recovery: Upon which occasion he discovered the Conspiracy of these Indians, how they were resolved to cut off Mr. Welfons Company, for the continual Injuries they had done them, and would now take opportunity of their weakness, and do it; and for that end had conspired with other Indians their Neighbours thereabouts: and thinking the People here would revenge their death, they therefore thought to do the like by them, therefore to prevent it, and that speedily, by taking some of the chief of them before it was too late, for he assured them of the truth thereof.

This did much trouble them, and they took it into serious consideration, and found upon Examination, and other Evidences to give light thereto, That the matter was really so as the said Sachem had told them. In the mean time came an English-man from the Massachusetts, from the said Company, in misery, as hath been above-related, with a small pack at his back, and although he knew not a foot of the way, yet he

^{*} This man's name was Phinehas Pratt, who hath penred the particular of his perilous Journey, and som other things relating to this Tragedy.

got safe hither, but lost his way, which was well for him, for he was pursued by two *Indians*, who by Gods Providence mis-
sed of him by that means ; and he related how all things stood
with them there, and that he durst stay no longer, for he ap-
prehended by what he observed they would be all slain ere long.
This made them make the more haste, and they dispatched a
Boat away with some men under the conduct of Captain *Stan-
dift*, who found them in a miserable condition ; out of which
he rescued them, and helped them to some relief, cut off some
of the chief Conspirators against them, and according to his
Order offered to bring them all to *Plimouth*, to be there untill
Mr. *Weston* came, or some other way should be presented for
their help : they thanked him and the rest, but they rather de-
sired that he would help them with some Corn, and they would
go with their small Ship to the Eastward, to look out for a
way for themselves, either to have relief by meeting with Mr.
Weston, or if not to work with the Fishermen for their supply,
and their passage for *England* : so they shipped what they had
of any worth, and he helped them with as much Corn as he
could, and saw them out of the Bay under sail, and so came
home, not taking the worth of a peny of any of them.

This was the end of these that sometimes boasted of their
strength, being all able, lusty men, and what they would do and
bring to pass, in comparison of the people at *Plimouth*, who had
many Women and Children, and weak ones ; and said at their
first arrival, when they saw the wants at *Plimouth*, That they
would take another course, and not fall into such a condition as this
simple people were come to : but a mans way is not in his own
power, God can make the weak to stand : Let him that thinketh
he standeth (in such respect as well as other) take heed lest he
fall.

Shortly after Mr. *Weston* came over with some of the Fisher-
men, where he heard of the Ruine of his Plantation, and got
a Boat, and with a man or two came to see how things were,
but by the way (for want of skill) in a Storm he cast away his
Boat in the bottome of the Bay, between *Merrimack* and

Pascataqu.

Pascataqua, and hardly escaped with life ; and afterwards fell into the hands of the *Indians*, who pillaged him of all that he had saved from the Sea, and stripped him of all his Clothes to his Shirt. At last he got to *Pascataqua*, and borrowed a Suit of Clothes, and got means and came to *Plimouth*. A strange alteration there was in him, to such as had seen and known him in his former flourishing condition ; so uncertain are all things of this uncertain world.

But to return to the state and condition of the Planters at *Plimouth*, all this while no supply heard of, so they began to think how they might raise as much corn as they could, so as they might not languish in misery as formerly they had done, and at the present they did, and it was thought the best way, and accordingly given way unto, that every one should plant Corn for his own particular, and in that regard provide for themselves, and in other respects continue the general course and way as before : & so they ranged all their youth under some family, and set upon such a course, which had good success, for it made all hands very industrious, so as much Corn was planted.

This course being settled, by that time all their Corn was planted, all their victuals was spent, and they were only to rest on Gods providence ; many times at night, not knowing where to have any thing to sustain nature the next day, and so (as one well observed) had need to pray that God would give them their daily bread, above all people in the world ; yet they bare those wants with great patience and alacrity of spirit, and that for so long a time as the most part of two years.

In his first Decade, p. 208.

Which brings to minde what *Peter Martyr* writes in magnifying of the *Spaniards* ; They (said he) led a miserable life for five dayes together, with parched grain of *Maize* only, and that not to satiety, and then concludes, that such pains, such labours, he thought none living, which is not a Spaniard, could have endured.

But alas, those men when they had *Maize* (that is Indian Corn) they thought it as good as a feast ; and wanted not only for five dayes together, but sometimes for two or three months together,

together, and neither had bread, nor any kinde of corn.

Indeed in another place in his second *Decade* pag. 94. He mentions how others of them were worse put to it, where they were faine to eat Dogs, Toads and dead Men, and so almost all of them died. - From these extremities the Lord in his goodness preserved both their lives and healths, let his Holy Name have the praeife; yet let me here make use of his conclusion, which in some sort may be applied to this people; *That with their miseries they opened a way to those new lands: and after storms with what ease other men came to inhabit in them, in respect of the calamities these men suffered; so as they seemed to go to a bride feast where all things are provided for them.*

They having one boat left, and shew none of the best, with a net which they bought, improved them for the taking of Bass, which proved a good help to them, and when those failed they were fain all hands to go dig shell-fish out of the sands for their living; in the winter season ground-nuts and fowl was the principal of their refreshing, until God sent more settled and suitable supplies, by his blessing upon their industry.

At length they received some letters from the adventurers, which gave them intelligence of a ship set out, to come hither unto Plimouth, named the *Parragon*; This ship was bought by Mr. John Pierce, and set out on his own charge, upon hopes of great matters; the passengers and goods, the Company sent in her he took in for fraight, for which they agreed with him to be delivered here: this was he in whose name their first Patent was taken, for this place where Plimouth is, by reason of acquaintance and some alliance that some of their friends had with him; but his name was only used in trust; but when he saw they were here hopefully seated, and by the success God gave them, had obtained the favour of the Council of New-England, he goes & sues to the said Council for another Patent of much larger extent in their names, which was easily obtained, but he meant to keep it to himself, and to allow them what he pleased to hold of him as tenants, and sue to his Courts as chief Lord: but the Lord marvelously crossed him in his proceedings.

William
Barke

ceedings; for when his ship above-named set out from the *Thames*, she sprang a leak by that time she got to the *Downs*, and also by reason of a chop that accidentally befel one of her Cables, it brake in a stres of wind while she there rode, and was in danger to have bin driven on the sands, and thereupon was constrained to return back to *London*, and there arrived in fourteen dayes after, and was haled up into the Dock, and an hundred pound more bestowed on her to mend her leaks and bruises, which she received in the aforesaid storm; and when she was again fitted for the voyage, he pestered his ship, and takes in more passengers, and those some of them not very good, to help to bear his losses, and sets out the second time; and when he was half way or thereabouts to *New-England* was forced back again by an extreme tempest, wherein the goodness and mercy of God appeared in their preservation, being one hundred and nine souls. This ship suffered the greatest extremity at sea, at her second setting forth, as is seldome the like heard of; It was about the middle of *February* that the storm began, and it continued for the most part of fourteen dayes, but for two or three dayes and nights together in most violent extremity: at the beginning of the storm, their boat being above-decks, was thrown over-board; they spent their Main-mast, their Round-house was beaten off with the storm, and all the upper works of their ship: he that stood to give direction, for the guiding of her before the sea, was made fast, to prevent his washing overboard, and the seas did so over-rake them, as that many times those upon the deck, knew not whether they were within-board or without; and by her extreme leaking, being a very rotten ship, and the storm increasing, she was once very near foundering in the sea, so as they thought she would never rise again: Notwithstanding the Lord was pleased of his great mercy to preserve them; and after great weather-beating and extraordinary danger, they arrived safe at *Portsmouth* in *Hampshire*, to the wonderment of all that beheld in what condition they were, and heard what they had endured.

Upon the return of the said Mr. John Pierce for *England*,

(he

This Relation
was made by
Mr William
Pierce the
Master of the
said ship, and
some of the pas-
sengers of good
credit.

(he being personally in this his ship in the so sad storm) the other Merchant Adventurers, got him to assign over the grand Patent to the Company, which he had taken in his own Name, and made quite void their former Patent.

About the latter end of June, came in a ship at Plymouth with Captain Francis West, who had a Commission to be Admiral of New-England, to restrain Interlopers, and such fishing ships as came to fish and trade without licence from the Council of New-England, for which they should pay a great sum of money; but he could do no good of them, for they were too strong for him, and he found the fishermen to be refractory, and their owners upon complaint made to the Parliament, procured an order, that fishing should be free. He told the Governour of Plymouth that they spake with a ship at sea, and were on board her, that was coming to the said Plantation of Plymouth, in which were sundry passengers, and they marvelled she was not arrived, fearing some miscarriage; for they lost her in a storm that fell shortly after they had been on board: which relation filled them full of fears, yet mixed with hope. The Master of this ship had two Hogsheads of Pease to sell, but seeing their wants, held them at Nine pounds sterling an Hogshead, and under Eight he would not take, and yet would have Beaver at an under-rate; but they told him they had lived so long without, and would do still, rather than give so unreasonably: so the said Ship went from Plymouth to Virginia.

About fourteen dayes after came in the Ship called *The Ann*, whereof Mr. William Pierce was Master: two of the principal Passengers that came in this Ship were Mr. Timothy Hatherly and Mr. George Morton; the former, viz. Mr. Timothy Hatherly, soon after his arrival met with some croſs Proviſences by the burning of his House, whereby he was much impoveriſhed, and much discouraged, and returned the Winter following for England: and afterwards the Lord was pleased to renew his Estate, and he came again into New-England, and proved a very profitable and beneficial Instrument both in Church and Common-wealth, being one of the first beginners,

and

and a good Instrument to uphold the Church and Town of *Situate*; and also served God and the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth* in the place of Magistracy, and retained his Integrity in the Profession of the wayes of Christ unto old Age; still surviving at the penning hereof.

The latter of the two fore-named, *viz.* Mr. *George Morton*, was a pious gracious Servant of God, and very faithful in whatsoever publick Imployment he was betrufted withall, and an unfeigned well-willer, & according to his Sphere and Condition, a suitable Promoter of the Common Good and Growth of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, labouring to still the Discontents that sometimes would arise amongst some spirits, by occasion of the Difficulties of these new beginnings: but it pleased God to put a period to his dayes soon after his arrival in *New-England*, not surviving a full year after his coming ashore. With much comfort and peace he fell asleep in the Lord in the Month of June, Anno 1624.

About ten dayes after the arrival of the Ship called *The Ann* above-named, there came in another small Ship of about forty four Tun, named the *James*, Mr. *Bridges* being Master thereof; which said Ship, the *Ann* had lost at Sea by reason of foul Weather: she was a fine new Vessel, built to stay in the Country. One of the principal Passengers that came in her was Mr. *John Jenny*, who was a godly, though otherwise a plain man, yet singular for publicknes of spirit, setting himself to seek and promote the Common Good of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*; who spent not only his part of this Ship (being part Owner thereof) in the general Concernment of the Plantation, but also afterwards was always a Leading-man in promoting the general Interest of this Colony: He lived many years in *New-England*, and fell asleep in the Lord Anno 1644. In the two Ships last named, came over many other persons besides those before recited, who proved of good use in their places.

These Passengers, seeing the low and poor condition of those that were here before them, were much daunted and dismayed, and

and according to their diverse humours, were diversly affected. Some wished themselves in *England* again; others fell on weeping, fancying their own misery in what they saw in others; other-some pitying the distreſs they ſaw their Friends had been long in, and ſtill were under. In a word, all were full of ſadneſs; only ſome of their old Friends rejoiced to ſee them, and that it was no worfe with them, for they could not expect it ſhould be better, and now hoped they ſhould enjoy better dayes together. And truely it was no marvel they ſhould be thus affected, for they were in a very low condition, both in reſpect of Food and Clothing at that time.

To conſider ſeriously how ſadly the Scripture ſpeaks of the Famine in *Jacobs* time, when he ſaid to his Sons, *Go, buy us food, that we may live and not die;* and that the Famine was great and heavy in the Land, and yet they had great Herds, and ſtores of Cattel of ſundry kindeſs, which beſides their flesh, muſt needs produce other uſeful benefits for food, and yet it was accounted a ſore affliction: But the miſery of the Planterſ at *Plimouth* at the firſt beginning, muſt needs be very great therefore, who not only wanted the ſtaff of Bread, but all the benefits of Cattel, and had no Egypt to go to, but God fed them out of the Sea for the moſt part; ſo wonderfuſ is his powerful Providence over hiſ in all Ages: for hiſ Mercy endureth for ever.

About the middle of September arrived Captain *Robert Gorges* in the Bay of the *Massachusetts*, with ſundry Paſſengerſ and Fa- milieſ, intended there to begin a Plantation, and pitched upon that place which Mr. *Wefon* fore-named had forſaken. He had a Commission from the Council of *New-England* to be General Governoūr of the Country: and they appointed for his Council and Aſſistantſ, Captain *Francis West* the aforesaid Ad- miral, *Christopher Levet Esq;* and the Governoūr of *Plimouth* for the time being: Also they gave him Authority to Chooſe ſuch other as he ſhould finde fit. Also they gave by their Commission full Power to him and his Aſſistantſ, or any three of them, (wherof hiſelf was alwayes to be one) To do and execute what

what to them should seem good, in all Cases, Capital, Criminal, and Civil; with divers other Instructions: Of which, and his Commission, it pleased him to suffer the Gouvernour of Plimouth to take a Copy.

He meeting with the aforesaid Mr. Weston at Plimouth, called him before him and some other of the Assistants, with the Gouvernour of Plimouth aforesaid, and charged him with the ill carriage of his Men at the Massachusets, by which means the peace of the Country was disturbed, and himself and the people which he had brought over to plant in that Bay, thereby much prejudiced. To which the said Weston easily answered, That what was done in that behalf, was done in his absence, and might have befallen any man: He left them sufficiently provided, and conceived they would have been well governed; and for any error committed, he had sufficiently smarted.

The said Mr. Tho: Weston was a man of parts, and a Merchant of good account in London. Some time after these passages he went for England, and died in the City of Bristol; he proved but a staff of Reed to the Plantation of Plimouth.

Another particular was, *An abuse done to his father Sir Ferdinand Gorges, and to the State.* The thing was this: He used him and others of the Council of New-England, to procure him a License for the Transporting of many great Pieces of Ordnance for New-England, pretending great Fortification here in the Country; for which when he had obtained, he sold them beyond Sea for his private profit: At which the State was much offended, and his Father suffered a shrewd check, and he had Order to apprehend him.

The said Weston excused it as well as he could, but could not wholly deny it: but after much speech about it, by the Mediation of the Gouvernour of Plimouth, and some other Friends, the said Captain Gorges was inclined to gentleness, (though he apprehended the abuse of his Father deeply) which when the said Weston perceived, he grew the more presumptuous, and gave such cutting and provoking speeches, as made the said Captain rise up in great indignation and distemper, vowing, *That he would either curb him, or send him home for England:* At which the said Weston was daunted, and came privately to the Gouvernour of Plimouth, to know whether they would suffer him to send him for England? It was answered him, *They could not hinder*

binder it : and much blamed him, that after they had pacified things, he should thus break out by his own folly and rashness, and bring trouble upon himself and others. He confess it was his passion, and prayed the Governour aforesaid to intreat for him, and procure a pacification for him, if he could : the which at last he did obtain with much difficulty. So he was called again, and the said Captain Gorges was content to take his own Bond to be ready to make further answer, when either he or the Lords of the Council should send for him ; and at last he took onely his own Word, and so there was a friendly parting on all hands.

Soon after this, the said Captain Gorges took his leave, and went to the *Massachusetts* by land, being very thankful for his kinde Entertainment. His Ship stayed at *Plimouth*, and fittet for to go to *Virginia*, having some Passengers to deliver there, and with her returned sundry of thofe from *Plimouth*, which came over on their particular account ; some out of discontent and dislike of the Country, and others by reason of Fire that burnt their Houses and all their Provisions, so as they were necessitated thereunto. This Fire was by fome of the Seamen, that were Roystering in an House where it first began, making a great Fire, the weather being cold, which brake out of the Chimney into the Thatch, and burnt three Houses, and consumed all their Goods and Provisions. The House in which it began, was right against their Store-house at *Plimouth*, which they had much ado to save ; in which was the Common Store of the Provisions of the Plantation, which had it been lost, the same had been overthrown : but through Gods mercy it was saved, by the diligence of the people, and care of the Governour and thofe about him. Some would have had the Goods thrown out, but if it had, there would have been much lost by the rude Company belonging to the two fore-named Ships, which were almost all on shore at this time ; but a trusty Company were placed within, as well as fuch as were mean-while employed in quenching the Fire without, that if necessity required they might have them all out with speed : for they

Where to
be
remember
me
and send me
to me to PE
Peter Fashon
1671 July 21
This was on the
fifth of No-
vember 1624.

Car

*A very remarkable Preserva-
tion.*

suspected some malicious dealing, if not plain Treachery ; and whether it was only suspected or no, God knows : but this is certain, that when the Tumult was greatest, there was a voice heard (but from whence it came is uncertain) that bade them *look well about them, for all were not friends that were then about them* ; and soon after, when the vehemency of the Fire was over, smoke was seen to arise within a Shed that was joyned to the end of the aforesaid Store-house , which was wattled up with boughs, in the withered leaves whereof the fire being kindled, which some running to quench, found a long Fire-brand of about an Ell long, lying under the wall on the inside, which could not come thither by casualty, but must be laid there by some hand, in the judgement of all that saw it. But God kept them from this danger, whatever might be intended.

But to return again to speak something of the aforesaid Captain *Gorges*, after he had been at the Eastward and expedited some occasions there, he and some that depended upon him returned for *England*, having scarcely saluted the Country in his Government, finding the state of things not to answer his quality and condition ; his people dispersed themselves, some went for *England*, others for *Virginia*, some few remained, and were helped with supplies from *Plimouth* : amongst the rest, the said Captain brought over a Minister with him, one Mr. *Morrel*, who returned for *England* about a year after him, he took ship at *Plimouth*, and had a certain power and authority of superintendency over other Churches granted him, and instructions for that end ; but he never shewed it, or made any use of it, but only spake of it to some of *Plimouth* at his going away. This was in effect the end of the second Plantation, in the aforesigned place called *wesagusquasset*.

There were also some scattering beginnings made in other places, as at *Pascataqua*, by Mr. *David Thompson* ; and at *Mon-
begin*, and some other places, by sundry others.

I 6 2 4.

The time of new Election of Officers being come for this year at *Plimouth*, the number of their people being increased, and their troubles and occasions therewith ; the Governour desired them to change the persons, as well as renew the Election, and also to adde more Assistants to the Governour for help and counsel, and the better carrying on of publick affaires, shewing that it was necessary it should so be ; for if it were any honour or benefit, it was fit that others should be made partakers of it ; if it was a burden (as doubtles it was) it was but equal that others should help to bear it, and that this was the end of yearly Elections.

The conclusion was, that whereas there was before but one Assistant, they now chose five, giving the Governour a double voice ; and afterwards they encreased them to seven, which course hath continued in that Colony until this day.

In the month of *March*, in this year Mr. *Edward Winflow* arrived at *Plimouth* in *New-England*, having bin employed as agent for that Plantation, on sundry occasions, with the Merchant Adventurers in *England*, who brought a considerable supply with him, the ship being bound on a fishing voyage ; and with him came Mr. *John Lyford* a Minister, which was sent over by some of the Adventurers.

There came over likewise in this ship three Heifers and a Bull, *The first Neat Cattel that came to N.E.* which was the first Neat Cattel that came into *New-England*.

The aforesaid *John Lyford*, when he came first on shore, saluted them of the Plantation of *Plimouth* with that reverence and humility, as is seldome to be seen ; and indeed made them ashamed, he so bowed and cringed unto them, and would have kissed their hands if they would have suffered him : yea he wept and shed many tears, blessing God that had brought him to see their faces ; and admiring the things they had done in their wants, as if he had been made all of love, and the humblest

H 3 person

person in the World : but in the end proved more like those mentioned by the Psalmist, that crouched and bowed, that heaps of the poor may fall by them : or like unto dissembling *Ibsmael*, who when he had slain *Gedaliah*, went out weeping, and met those that were coming to offer Incense in the house of the Lord, saying, *Come to Gedaliah*, when he meant to slay them. They gave him the best entertainment they could, in all simplicity, and as their Governour had used in all weighty affairs, to consult with their Elder Mr. Brewster, together with his Assistants ; so now he called Mr. *Lyford* also on such like occasions : after some short time, he desired to joyn himself a member to their Church, and was accordingly received ; he made a large confession of his Faith, and an acknowledgement of his former disorderly walking, and his being intangled with many Corruptions, which had bin a burden to his Conscience, and blessed God for this oportunity of freedome and liberty, with many more such like expressions ; in some short time he fell into acquaintance with Mr. *John Oldham*, who was a copartner with him in his after courses ; not long after, both *Oldham* and he grew very perverse, and shewed a spirit of great malignity, drawing as many into a faction as they could : were they never so vile or prophane, they did nourish and abet them in all their doings, so they would but cleave to them, and speak against the Church : so as there was nothing but private meetings and whisperings amongst them, they feeding themselves and others, with what they should bring to pass in *England* by the faction of their * friends there ; which brought others as well as themselves into a fools Paradice, yet they could not carry so closely, but both much of their doings and sayings were discovered, although outwardly they set a fair face of things.

* That is, some
of the Adventu-
vers, who proved
in the issue Ad-
versaries to the
Plantation.

At length, when the Ship he came in was ready to return for *England*, and it was observed that *Lyford* was long in writing, and sent many Letters, and could not forbear to communicate to his Intimates such things as made them laugh in their sleeves, and thought he had done their errand sufficiently : The Gov-

ernour,

Psal. 10. 10.

Jer. 41. 6.

*Mr. Easton his Bio Recd.
Brought at Boston for 32.
16. November 19*

vernour and some of his friends knowing how things stood in reference to some known adversaries in *England*, and what hurt these things might do, took a boat and went out with the ship, a league or two to sea, and called for all *Lyfords* and *Oldhams* Letters, Mr. *William Pierce* being Master of the ship, and knew well their evil dealings, (both in *England* and here) afforded them all the assistance he could; he found about twenty of *Lyfords* Letters, many of them large, and full of flander's and false accusations, tending not only to their prejudice, but ruine and utter subversion; most of them they let pass, only took copies of them, but some of the most material, they sent true copies of them and kept the originals, lest he should deny them, and that they might produce his own hand against him; amongst these Letters they found the copies of two Letters, which were sent in a Letter of his to Mr. *John Pember-ton* a Minister, and a great opposite to the Plantation; these two Letters of which he took the copies, were the one of them written by a Gentleman in *England* to Mr. *Brewster* here, the other by Mr. *Winslow* to Mr. *Robinson* in *Holland*; at his coming away, as the ship lay at *Gravesend*, they lying sealed in the great Cabbin, whiles Mr. *Winslow* was busie about the affaires of the ship, this fly Merchant opens them, takes copies of them, and seals them up again, and not only seals the copies of them thus, *To his Friend and their Adversary*, but addes thereto in the Margent many scurrilous and flouting Annotations. In the evening the Governour returned, and they were something blank at it; but after some weeks when they heard nothing, were they then as brisk as ever, thinking nothing had been known, but all was gone currant, and that the Governour went out but to dispatch his own Letters.

The reason why the Governour and the rest concealed these things, was to let things ripen, that they might the better discover their intents, and see who were their adherents; because amongst the rest, they found a Letter of one their confederates, in which was written, that Mr. *Oldham*, and Mr. *Lyford* intended a reformation in Church and Common-wealth, and as soon as

the

the ship was gone they intended to joyn together and have the Sacrament ; few of *Oldhams* Letters were found in the aforesaid search, being so bad a Scribe as his hand was scarce legible, yet he was as deep in the mischief as the other ; and thinking they were now strong enough, they began to pick quarrels at every thing. *Oldham* being called to watch(according to order) refuseth to come, fell out with the Captain, called him *Rascall*, and beggarly *Rascall*, and resisted him, and drew his knife at him, though he offered him no wrong, nor gave him any ill terms, but with all fairness required him to do his duty ; the Governour hearing the tumult, sent to quiet it, but he ranted with great fury, and called them all *Traitors* : but being committed to Prison, after a while he came to himself, and with some slight punishment was let go upon his behaviour for further Censure, but to cut things short, at length it grew to this issue, that *Lyford* with his accomplices, without either speaking one word either to the Governour, Church or Elder, withdrew themselves, and set up a publick meeting apart on the Lords-day, with sundry such insolent carriages too long here to relate, beginning more publickly to act that which they had been long plotting.

It was now thought high time to prevent further mischief, to call them to account ; so the Governour called a Court, and summoned the whole company togther, and they charged *Lyford* and *Oldham* with such things as they were guilty of respecting the premises, but they were stiff, and stood resolutely upon the denial of most things, and required proof : they first alledged what was writ, compared with their practises here ; that it was evident they joyned in plotting against them, and disturbed their peace in their Civil and Church-state, which was most injurious, for both they and all the world knew they came hither to enjoy the liberty of their Consciences, in the free use of Gods Ordinances, and for that end had ventured their lives, and passed through so much hardship hitherto, and they and their friends had born the charge of these beginnings, which was not small, and that he (viz.) *Lyford*, for his part was sent over on this charge,

charge, and both he and his great family was maintained on the same; and for him to plot against them, and seek their ruine, was most unjust and perfideous.

But *Lyford* denied, and made strange of sundry things laid to his charge. Then his Letters were produced, at which he was struck mute. *Oldham* began to be furious, and to rage, because they had intercepted their Letters, provoked the people to Mutiny in such words as these; *My Masters, where are your hearts? now show your courage: you have often complained to me so and so, now is the time, if you will do any thing, I will stand by you, &c.* thinking that every one knowing his humour that had fooled & flattered him, or otherwise, or that in their Discontent uttered any thing unto him, would now side with him in open Rebellion: But he was deceived, for not a man opened his mouth, all were silent.

Then the Goverour took pains in Convicting *Lyford* of his Hypocrisie and Treachery, in abusing his friends, in taking Copies of their Letters in an under-hand way, and sending them abroad to their disgrace, &c. and produced them, and his own Letters under his own Hand, which he could not deny, and caused them to be read before all the people; at which all his Confederates were blank, and had not a word to say. But after awhile he began to say, *That sundry had made some Complaints unto him, and informed him of divers things:* which being there present, and the particulars named to them, they denied.

Then they dealt with him about his Dissembling in the Church, and that he professed to concur with them in all things, and what a large Confession he had made at his admittance; and that he held not himself a Minister, till he had a new Calling, &c. and yet now he contested against them, and drew a Company apart, and sequestred himself, and would go about to administer the Sacraments by his former Calling, without ever acquainting them with it. In conclusion he was fully convicted, and burst out into tears, and confess he feared he was a Reprobate, his sins were so great that he doubted that God would not pardon them, he was unsavoury salt, &c. and that he had

had so wronged them, as he could never make them amends ; confessing all he had written against them was false and naught, both for matter and manner : And all this he did with as much fulnes as words and tears could expess.

After their Trial and Conviction, the Court sentenced them to be expelled the Plantation ; John Oldham presently to depart, though his Wife and Familiy had liberty to stay all Winter, or longer, untill he could make provision to remove them comfortably. Lyford had liberty to stay six Months ; it was with some eye to his release, if he carried himself well in the meantime, and that his Repentance proved sound. Lyford acknowledged his Censure was farre les than he deserved, and afterwards he confessed his sin publickly in the Church with tears, more largely then before. I shall here relate it as I finde it penned by some who took it from his own mouth as himself uttered it.

Acknowledging, That he had done very evil, and slanderously abused them ; and thinking most of the people would take part with him, he thought to have carried all by violence and strong hand against them ; and that God might justly lay innocent blood to his charge, for he knew not what hurt might have come by these his writings, and blessed God that they were stayed ; and that he spared not to take knowledge from any of any evil that was spoken, but shut his eyes and ears against all the good ; and that if God should make him a vagabond in the earth, as was Cain, it was but just : and he confessed three things to be the causes of this his doings, Pride, Vain-glory, and Self-love : amplifying these Heads with many other expressions in the particulars of them, so as they began to conceive good thoughts of him upon his Repentance, and admitted him to teach amongst them as before ; yea sundry tender-hearted persons amongst them were so taken with his signs of Sorrow and Repentance, as they professed they would fall upon their knees to have his Censure remitted and released. But that which made them all stand amazed in the end (and may do all others that shall come to hear the same, for a rarer president can scarcely be named) was, that after two Monthes time

time all his former Confessions, Convictions, and publick Acknowledgements, both in the presence of God and his Church, and the whole Company, with so many Tears, and sad censures of himself, he should go again to justifie what he had done; for secretly he wrote a second Letter to the Adventurers in England, in which he justified all his former Writings, save in some things which tended to their damage.

*The Copy of this
Letter is extant
but too large to
be here inserted.*

I 6 2 5.

AT the time of their Election Court, John Oldham came again amongst them; and though it was a part of his Censure for his former Mutiny, *Not to return without leave first obtained*, yet he presumed without leave at all to come, being set on and hardened by the ill counsel of others; and not only so, but suffered his unruly passion to run beyond the bounds and limits of all Reason and Modesty, insomuch that some strangers that were with him were ashamed of his outrage, and rebuked him; but all Reproofs were but as Oyl to the fire, and made the flame of his choller the greater. He called them all to naught in his fury, an hundred Rebels and Traytors: but in conclusion, they Committed him until he was tamer, and then appointed a Guard of Musketeers, which he was to pass thorow, and every one was ordered to give him a blow on his Hinder-parts with the Butt-end of his Musket, and then he was conveyed to the Water-side, where a Boat was ready to carry him away, with this Farewell, *Go and mend your Manners.*

After the removal of his Family, he fell into some straits, and about a year after intended a Voyage to Virginia; and so it pleased God, that himself and sundry passengers being in the Barque, they were in great danger, so as they despaired of life, and fell to Prayer, and to Examination of their Hearts and Consciences, and confessed such sins as most burthened them;

and the said *John Oldham* did make a free and large Confession of the wrongs he had done to the Church and People at *Plymouth* in many particulars ; that as he had sought their Ruine, so God had now met with him, and might destroy him ; yea, he feared that they all fared the worse for his sake : He prayed God to forgive him, and made Vows, That if the Lord spared his life, he would become otherwife. This was reported by some of good Credit not long since living in the *Massachusetts* Bay, that were themselves partners in the same danger, which was on the Shores of *Cape Cod*.

*He was a man
of parts, but
high-spirited,
and extremely
passionate,
which marred
all in point of
right improve-
ment of them.*

Psal. 7. 15.

It pleased God to spare their lives, but they lost their voyage, and in time afterwards the said Mr. *John Olaham* carried himself fairly towards them, and acknowledged the hand of God to be with them, and seemed to have an honourable respect of them, and so far made his peace with them, as he had liberty to go and come at his pleasure, and in some time after went on trading in a small vessel amongst the *Indians*, and being weakly manned, upon some quarrel betwixt them, they slew him with an hatchet : this his death being one ground of the *Pequot* war, of which afterwards in its proper place.

The time being expired that Mr. *John Lyford* his Censure was to take place, he was so far from answering their hopes by amendment, as he had doubled his evil, as before-mentioned. But first behold the hand of God concerning him, wherein that of the *Psalmist* is verified, *he hath made a pit and digged it, and is fallen into the pit that he made* : he thought to bring shame and disgrace upon them, but instead of that, opens his own to all the world ; for his wife who was a prudent sober woman, taking notice of his false and deceitful carriage about the premises, in grief of minde expressed her fears, that God would bring upon himself and his family, some sad judgement for these and other his wicked practises, and related that he had a *Bastard* by another woman, before marriage with her, which he denied to her with an oath, but it afterwards appeared to be so : and another miscarriage of the like nature, more odiously circumstanced, was also discovered, for which he was forced to leave *Ireland*, and

and so came *New-England* to be troubled with him. Being banished hence, he went first to *Nantasket*, then to *Salem*, and after to *Virginia*, where he shortly after died.

I have been too tedious in my relating the plots of these wicked *Machavillians*: But to conclude, the Reader may take notice, that God observed and brought to nought their wicked devices, was a defence to the innocent, and caught them in the snares they privily layed for them, punishing one sin by another, until he had accomplished the freedom of his *Israel*, by the overthrow of his and their enemies; for which his mercy, let his holy Name be praised for evermore!

This storm thus blown over, yet sundry sad effects followed, for the company of the Merchant Adventurers brake in pieces hereupon, and the greatest part wholly deserted the Colony, but yet God took care of it; for although sundry of them fell off and adventured no more towards the support thereof; but rather proved manifest adversaries thereunto then otherwise: and the rest, partly because they were grown (some of them) low in their estates, and there being small hopes of returns to their expectations; although courteous in words and well wifhes, yet afforded little or no help after this, so that the Plantation was fain to stand on their own legs, being indeed marvellously supported by the Lord, for it pleased him so to bless their endeavours, as that they raised great crops of *Indian Corn* (about this time) so as they had enough, and to spare, and began to have thoughts of improving part of it in a way of trading with the *Indians*, and having only two shallops, and no bigger vessels, they laid a deck on the one of them in the midships, to preserve the corn dry from weather, & so sent her laden with corn to a place call'd *Kenebek*, about fifty leagues off to the Eastwards: and notwithstanding they were strangets to the way, and place of trade, and to the people, and having no seamen to go with them, and at that season, being the latter end of the year and drawing on to winter; yet it pleased God to preserve them, and so to bless their endeavours, as that they returned in safety, and with good success, it being the first enterprise they atchived

in this kind (at least) so far, and it proved an inlet to a further trade, which was greatly beneficial to them afterwards.

300 weight of
Beaver, with
other Furr's a
good quantity.

And here I may not omit the observable dispensation of Gods providence, respecting his dealing with the Adventurers forementioned, in reference unto two ships they sent unto these parts about that time, on a fishing voyage only upon their own account, having left the Plantation to shift for themselves ; one of these ships was a small one (*viz.*) the *James* forenamed, which was well laden with good *Cor fish*, and in her a great quantity likewise of *Beaver* and other furs, which was sent by the Plantation to the Adventurers, and returned for *England*: the other ship was also laden with good *dry fish*, and she also returned with her ; being thus well freighted, they went together lovingly and joyfully away, the greater ship towing the lesser at her stern all the way over-bound, and had such fair weather, as they never cast her off, till they were shot deep into the *English Chanel*, almost within sight of *Plimouth*, and yet there she was unhappily taken by a *Turks-man* of war, & carried into *Sally*, where the Master and Men were made Slaves, and many of the Beaver-skins were sold for four pence a piece. Thus were all their hopes dashed in this respect, and the joyfull News they went to carry home, turned into heavy Tidings. Some thought this a Hand of God for some unkindnes shewed to the Plantation, by exactation upon them in reference to a parcel of goods they a little before had sent over to them on extreme Rates : But Gods Judgements are unsearchable, neither ought we to be too bold therewith. But however, it shews us the uncertainty of all humane things, and what little cause there is injoying in them, or trusting to them.

In the bigger of these Ships Captain *Miles Standish* went over as Agent in the behalf of the Plantation, in reference unto some particulars yet depending betwixt them and the Adventurers ; as also to the Honourable Council of *New-England*: and notwithstanding some Difficulty he met with in his occasions, by reason of the Pestilence which was then so hot in the City of *London*, yet he accomplished his busines so, as he

he left things in a fair way for future Composition betwixt the said Merchant-Adventurers and the Plantation: and he spake also with some of the Honourable Council afore-named, who promised all helpfulness to the Plantation that lay in them. About this time it pleased the Lord likewise to give them peace, health, and good success on their endeavours, his holy Name be praised.

I 6 2 6.

About the beginning of April, they heard of Captain Standish his arrival, and sent a boat to fetch him home; welcome he was, but the news he brought was sad in many regards, not only in regard of the aforementioned losses which their friends had suffered, and some of them dead of the *Plague*, but also that Mr. John Robinson their Pastor was dead, which struck them with much sorrow and sadness, as they had great cause: his and their adversaries, had been long and continually plotting, how they might hinder his coming into New-England, but now the Lord had appointed him to go a greater journey, at less charge, to a better place.

Mr. John
Robinson's
death.

But before I pafs things concerning this Worthy Servant of Christ Mr. John Robinson, I shall here infert the honourable testimony that Mr. William Bradford senior hath left behinde him, concerning him, being greatly acquainted with his worth and excellency.

Saith he, *such was the mutual love and reciprocal respect that this worthy man had to his flock, and his flock to him, that it might be said of them, as it was once of that famous Emperour Marcus Aurelius and the people of Rome, That it was hard to judge whether he delighted more in having such a People, or they in having such a Pastor.* But to return.

Captain Standish likewise brought the sad news of the death of Mr. Robert Cushman, their ancient friend, whom the Lord

The death of
Mr. Robert
Cushman.

took away also this year (about the same time) who was as their right hand with their friends the Adventurers, and for divers years had done and agitated all their busines with them to their great advantage, of whom occasionally there hath been honourable mention formerly made in this Book.

About this time they received divers Letters from their friends at *Leyden in Holland*, full of sad lamentation for their heavy losſ by the death of their Pastor Mr. *Robinson* above-named ; and although their wills were good to come over to their brethren in *New-England*, yet they saw no probability of means how it might be effected, but concluded (as it were) that all their hopes was cut off, and many being aged, began to drop away by death. All which things before related, being well weighed and laid together, it could not but strike them with great perplexity, and to look humanely on the state of things as they presented themselves at this time, it is a marvel it did not wholly discourage and sink them, but they gathered up their spirits, and the Lord so helped them (whose work they had in hand) as now when they were very low, they began to rise again ; and being stripped (in a manner) of all humane helps, and hopes, he brought things about otherwise in his divine Providence, so as they were not only upheld and sustainted, but their proceedings both honoured and imitated by others, as by the sequel will appear.

1627.

THIS Year they sent Mr. *Isaac Allerton* for *England*, and gave him order to make a Composition with the Adventurers, in reference unto ſome particulars betwixt the Plantation and them, which Captain *Standish* had begun, as is before hinted, and at the ordinary ſeafon of the year (for the expe-
c-tation of ſhips) he returned with ſome ſucces in the buſi-
neſs he was employed in.

Likewise

Likewise this Year they began to make some distribution of Lands, having had hitherto but to every person one Acre allowed him as to propriety, besides their Home-steads, or Garden-plots; the reason was that they might keep together, both for more safety and defence, and the better Improvement of the general Employments: which condition of theirs brings to minde that which may be read in *Pliny* of the Romans first beginnings in *Romulus* time, how every man contented himself with two Acres of Land, and had no more assigned them: and

*Pliny, lib. 18.
Chap. 2.*

Chap. 3. It was thought a great Reward to receive at the hands of the People of Rome a Pinte of Corn; and long after, the greatest Present given to a Captain that had got a Victory over their Enemies, was as much ground as he could Till in one day; and he was not accounted a good, but a dangerous man, that would not content himself with seven Acres of Land; as also how they did pound their Corn in Mortars, as these people were forced to do many years before they could get a Mill.

Notwithstanding as abovesaid, so small a portion of Land served them at the first, yet afterwards for divers Reasons moving thereto, they were necessitated to lay out some larger Proportions to each person; yet resolving to keep such a mean in distribution of Lands, as should not hinder their growth by others coming to them, and therefore accordingly allotted to every one in each Family Twenty Acres to be laid out, five Acres in breadth by the Water-side, and four Acres in length.

I may not omit the inserting of a particular that fell out this year, in reference unto a Ship with many Passengers in her, and some considerable goods, which was bound for *Virginia*, who had lost themselves at Sea, either by the insufficiency of the Master, or his illness (for he was sick, and lame of the Scurvy, so as he could but lye in the Cabbin-door and give direction, and (it should seem) was badly assisted either with Mate or Mariners) or else the fear of, and the unruliness of the Passengers was such, as they made them steer a Course between the Southwest and Northwest, that they might fall with some Land,

Land, whatever it was they cared not, for they had been six weeks at Sea and had no Beer, nor Water, nor Wood left, but had burnt up all their empty Cask, onely one of the Company had a Hogshead of Wine or two, which was also almost spent, so as they feared they should be starved at Sea, or consumed with Diseases, which made them run this desperate Course. But it pleased God, that although they came so near the Sholes of *Cape Cod*, or else ran stumbling over them in the night they knew not how, they came before a small Harbour that lieth about the middle of *Mannamoiet Bay*, to the Southward of *Cape Cod*, and with a small gale of wind, and about a high water, touched upon a Barre of Sand that lieth before it; but had no hurt, the Sea being smooth so as they laid out an Anchor; but towards Evening the wind sprang up at Sea, and was so rough as they brake their Cable, and beat them over the Barre into the Harbour, where they saved their Lives and Goods: for although with much beating they had sprung the butt-end of a Plank, yet they soon got over, and ran upon a dry Flatt within the Harbour close to a Beach, and at a low water got out their Goods, and were not a little glad that they had saved their Lives. But when they had refreshed themselves, not knowing where they were, nor what to do, were much troubled, but soon after saw some *Indians* come towards them in Canoos, which made them stand upon their guard, but when they heard some of them speak *English*, they were not a little revived; especially when they heard them ask whether they were not the *Governour* of *Plimouth's* Men, or Friends, and that they would bring them to the *English* houses, or carry their Letters: and when they had feasted these *Indians*, and given them many gifts, they sent two men and a Letter to the *Governour* of *Plimouth*, by which he had intelligence of their condition, and took order for their supply: they hoping by mending of their Ship to recover her to go to Sea again, and accordingly did mend her; but afterwards having but bad Moring, was put on shore again, and suffered so much shipwreck as she never got off more, but all the Company

pany were forced to repair to *Plimouth*, where they continued the best part of a year, being courteously entertained, and so were dispersed: The greatest part of them went to *Virginia*, and some remained in the Country. The chief amongst them were Mr. *Fells*, Mr. *Sibsey*, and the Masters Name was *Johnston* a Scotsman.

This Year the Plantation of *Plimouth* received Messages from the *Dutch* Plantation, sent unto them from the Gover-nour there, written both in *Dutch* and *French*: The sum of the Letters forementioned were, To Congratulate the *English* here, taking notice of much that might engage them to a friend-ly Correspondency and good Neighbourhood, as, The propin-quity of their Native Country, Their long continued Friend-ship, &c. and desires to fall into a way of some Commerce and Trade with them.

The Dutch had
trading in those
Southern parts
divers years be-
fore the *English*
came, but they
began no Plan-
tation until af-
ter the *English*
came, and were
here seated.

To which the Governor and Council of *Plimouth* returned answerable courteous acceptance of their loving Propositions, respecting their good Neighbourhood in general, and particu-larly for Commerce: And accordingly the *Dutch* not long after sent their Secretary Mr. *Isaac de Rosier* with Letters and goods, who laid the foundation of a Trade that continued between them many years after, to their mutual benefit. They also brought the *English* acquainted with the trading of *Wampam-peag*, untill then little known to us, nor esteemed by us, but was after of good valuation, and profitable. Although for the space of 20 years it was of great esteem amongst the Natives in diver's parts of the Country, so as it made the *Indians* in these parts Rich, Proud and Powerful, yet untill they had store of it, they could not attain *English* Ammunition, but were fain to im-prove their own Artillery of Bowes and Arrows: But when as they learned to make store of *Wampam*, they furnished them-selves with Guns, Powder and Shot, which no Laws can re-strain, by reason of the basenes of sundry unworthy persons, both *English*, *Dutch* and *French*, which may turn to the ruine of many: for hitherto the *Indians* of these parts had no Pieces, nor other Arms but their Bowes and Arrows and Clubs,

nor of many years after; neither durst they scarce handle a Gun, though out of kelter, it was a terror to them; but those Indians to the Eastern parts which had Commerce with the French, got Pieces of them; and they in the end made a common Trade of it; and in time our English Fishermen, led with the like Covetousness, followed their example for their own gain: but upon Complaint against them; it pleased the Kings Majesty to prohibit the same by a strict Proclamation, Commanding that no sort of Arms or Ammunition should by any of His Subjects be Traded with them.

I. 6 2 8.

THIS Year died Mr. Richard Warren, who hath been mentioned before in this Book; and was an useful Instrument, and during his life bare a deep share in the Difficulties and Troubles of the first Settlement of the Plantation of New-Plimouth.

This Gentleman's name is here occasionally used, & although he came over in year 1625. yet these passages in reference to Morton fell out about this year, and therefore referred to this place.

Whereas about three years before this time there came over one Captain Wollaston, a man of considerable parts, and with him three or four more of some Eminency, who brought with them a great many Servants, with Provisions, and other Requisites for to begin a Plantation, and pitched themselves in a place within the Massachusetts Bay, which they called afterwards by their Captains Name, Mount Wollaston; which place is since called by the Name of Braintry. And amongst others that came with him, there was one Mr. Thomas Morton, who it should seem had some small Adventure of his own or other mens amongst them, but had little respect, and was slighted by the meanest Servants they kept. They having continued some time in New-England, and not finding things to answer their Expectation, nor Profit to arise as they looked for, the said Captain Wollaston takes a great part of the Servants, and transports them to Virginia, and disposed of them there, and writes back

back to one Mr. *Rasdale*, one of his chief partners, (& accounted their Merchant) to bring another part of them to *Virginia* likewise, intending to put them off there, as he had done the rest ; and he with the consent of the said *Rasdale*, appointed one whose Name was *Filcher* to be his Lieutenant, and to govern the remainder of the Plantation, untill he or *Rasdale* should take further order thereabout.

But the aforesaid *Morton* (having more craft then honesty) having been a Petty-fogger at *Furnivals Inne* ; he in the others absence watches an opportunity (Commons being but hard among them) and got some strong drink, and other junkets, and made them a feast, and after they were merry, he began to tell them he would give them good Counsel : you see (saith he) that many of your fellows are carried to *Virginia*, and if you stay still until *Rasdale's* return, you will also be carried away and sold for slaves with the rest ; therefore I would advise you to thrust out this Lieutenant *Filcher*, and I having a part in the Plantation, will receive you as my partners and confociates, so may you be free from service, and we will Converse, Plant, Trade and live together as equals (or to the like effect) This counsel was easily followed, so they took opportunity, and thrust Lieutenant *Filcher* out of doors, and would not suffer him to come any more amongst them, but forced him to seek bread to eat, and other necessaries amongst his neighbours, till he could get passage for *England*.

After this they fell to great licentiousness of life, in all profaneness, and the said *Morton* became Lord of misrule, and maintained (as it were) a school of *Atheism*, and after they had got some goods into their hands, and got much by trading with the *Indians*, they spent it as vainly, in quaffing and drinking both Wine and strong Liquors, in great excess (as some have reported) *Ten pounds worth* in a Morning, setting up a *May-pole*, drinking and dancing about it, and frisking about it, like so many *Fairies* or *Furies* rather, yea and worse practises, as if they had anew revived and celebrated the feast of the *Romans* Goddess *Flora*, or the beastly practises of the mad *Bacchanlians*.

See the sad Effects of the want of good Government.

lians. The said *Morton* likewise shew his Poetry, composed sundry Rythmes and Verses, some tending to laciuousnes, and others to the detraction and scandal of some persons names, which he affixed to his Idle or Idol *May-pole*: they changed also the name of their place, and instead of calling it *Mount Wollaston*, they called it the *Merry Mount*, as if this jollity would have lasted alwayes. But this continued not long, for shortly after, that Worthy Gentleman Mr. *John Endicott*, who brought over a Patent under the Broad Seal of *England* for the Government of the *Massachusetts*, visiting these parts, caused that *May-pole* to be cut down, and rebuked them for their prophanes, and admonished them to look to it that they walked better; so the name was again changed, and called *Mount Dagon*.

Now to maintain this riotous Prodigality and profuse expence, the said *Morton* thinking himself lawles, and hearing what gain the Fishermen made of trading of Pièces, Powder and Shot; he as head of this conforstship, began the practice of the same in these parts; and first he taught the *Indians* how to use them, to charge and discharge them, and what proportion of powder to give the Piece, according to the size or bigness of the same, and what shot to use for Fowl, and what for Deer: and having thus instructed them, he employed some of them to Hunt and Fowl for him; so as they became somewhat more active in that imployment then any of the *English*, by reason of their swiftness of foot, and nimblenes of body, being also quick-fighted, and by continual exercise, well knowing the haunt of all sorts of game; so as when they saw the execution that a Piece would do, and the benefit that might come by the same, they became very eager after them, and would not stick to give any price they could attain to for them; accounting their Bows and Arrows but bables in comparison of them.

And here we may take occasion to bewail the mischief which came by this wicked man, and others like unto him; in that notwithstanding all laws, for the restraint of selling Ammunition to the *Natives*, that so far base covetousnes prevailed, and doth still prevail, as that the *Salvages* become amply furnished with

Guns,

Guns, Powder, Shot, Rapiers, Pistols, and also well-skilled in repairing of defective Arms: yea some have not spared to tell them how Gun-powder is made, and all the materials in it, and that they are to be had in their own Land; and would (no doubt, in case they could attain to the making of *Salt-Peter*) teach them to make Powder: and what mischief may fall out unto the *English* in these parts thereby, let this pestilent fellow *Morton* (aforenamed) bear a great part of the blame and guilt of it to future Generations. But lest I should hold the Reader too long in the relation of the particulars of his vile actings; when as the *English* that then lived up and down about the *Massachusetts*, and in other places, perceiving the sad consequences of his trading, so as the *Indians*, because furnished with the *English* Arms & Ammunition, and expert in the improving of them, and fearing they should at one time or another get a blow thereby; and also taking notice, that if he were let alone in his way, they should keep no servants for him, because he would entertain any how vile soever: Sundry of the chief of the straggling Plantations met together, and agreed by mutual consent to send to *Plimouth*, who were then of more strength to joyn with them, to suppress this mischief: who considering the particulars proposed to them to joyn together to take some course with him, and finding them weighty, agreed together to take some speedy course, to prevent (if it might be) the evil that was accrewwing towards them; and resolved first to admonish him of his wickedness respecting the premises, laying before him the injury he did to their common safety, and that his acting concerning the same, was against the Kings Proclamation: but he insolently persisted on in his way, and said, *the King was dead, and his displeasure with him, and threatened them that if they came to molest him, they should look to themselves;* so that they saw there was no way but to take him by force: so they resolved to proceed in such a way, and obtained of the Gouvernour of *Plimouth*, to send Captain *Standish* and some other aid with him, to take the said *Morton* by force, the which accordingly was done; but they found him to stand stiffly on his

his defence, having made fast his doors, armed his Consorts, set Powder and Shot ready upon the Table; scoffed and scorned at them, and he and his Complices being filled with strong drink, were desperate in their way: but he himself coming out of doors to make a shot at Captain *Standish*, he stepping to him, put by his Piece and took him, and so little hurt was done; and so he was brought Prisoner to *Plimouth*, and continued in durance until an opportunity of sending him for *England*, which was done at their common charge, and Letters also with him, to the honourable Council for *New-England*, and returned again into the Country in some short time, with less punishment then his demerits deserved (as was apprehended.)

The Year following he was again apprehended, and sent for *England*, where he lay a considerable time in *Exeter Goal*: for besides his miscarriage here in *New-England*, he was suspected to have murthered a man that had ventured monies with him, when he came first into *New-England*; and a warrant was sent over from the *Lord Chief Justice* to apprehend him, by virtue whereof, he was by the Governour of the *Massachusetts* sent into *England*, and for other of his misdemeanors amongst them in that Government, they demolished his House, that it might no longer be a roost for such unclean Birds: Notwithstanding he got free in *England* again, and wrote an Infamous and Scurrilous Book against many godly and chief men of the Country, full of lies and flanders, and full fraught with prophanie calumnies against their Names and Persons, and the wayes of God. But to the intent I may not trouble the Reader any more with mentioning of him in this History: In fine, sundry years after he came again into the Country, and was imprisoned at *Boston* for the aforesaid Book and other things, but denied sundry things therein, affirming his Book was adulterated. And soon after being grown old in wickedness, at last ended his life at *Pascataqua*. But I fear I have held the Reader too long about so unworthy a person, but hope it may be useful to take notice how wickedness was beginning, and would have further proceeded, had it not been prevented timely.

1629.

This Year sundry Ships came out of England, and arrived at Newneke, where Mr. John Endicot had chief Command; and by Infection that grew amongst the Passengers at Sea, it spread also among them on shore, of which many died, some of the Scurvy, and other of infectious Feavers. Mr. Endicot understanding that there was one at Plymouth that had skill in such Diseases, sent thither for him; at whose Request he was sent unto them: And afterwards, acquaintance and Christian love and Correspondency came on betwixt the said Governour, and the said Mr. Endicot; which was furthered by Congratulatory Letters that passed betwixt each other: one whereof, because it shews the beginning of their Christian fellowship, I shall here insert.

Now called
Salem.1684.
629
55

The Copy of a Letter from Mr. Endicot to
Mr. Bradford, as followeth.

Right Worlspipfull Sir,

It is a thing not usuall, that Servants to one Master, and of the same Household, should be strangers; I assure you I desire it not: nay, to speak more plainly, I cannot be so to you. Gods People are all marked with one and the same mark, and have for the main one and the same heart, guided by one and the same Spirit of Truth; and where this is, there can be no discord, nay here must needs be a sweet harmony and the same request (with you) I make unto the Lord, that we as Christian Brethren be united by an heavenly and unfeigned love, bending all our hearts and forces in furthering a Work beyond our strength, with reverence and fear, fast-

A Letter from
Mr. Endicot to
Mr. Bradford.

L

ning

ning our eyes always on him that is onely able to direct and prosper all our wayes. I acknowledge my self much bound to you for your kinde love and care in sending Mr. Fuller amongst us; and rejoice much that I am by him satisfied touching your judgement of the Outward Form of Gods Worship: It is (as farre as I can gaither) no other then is warranted by the Evidence of Truth, and the same which I have professed and maintained ever since the Lord in mercy revealed himself unto me, being farre from the common Report that hath been spread of you touching that particular: but Gods children must not look for less here below; and it is a great mercy of God that he strengtheneth them to go through it. I shall not need at this time to enlarge unto you, for (God willing) I purpose to see your face shortly: in the mean time I humbly take my leave of you, committing you to the Lords blessing and protection, and rest

Neumkeak, May 11.

Your assured loving Friend,

1629.

JOHN ENDICOT.

In the three Ships that came over this year to Salem in the Month of June, besides many godly Christians, there came over three Ministers; two of them, Mr. Skelton and Mr. Higginson, were Non-conformists, who having suffered much in their Native Land upon that account, they came over with a professed intention of practising Church-Reformation: the third Minister Mr. Bright was a Conformist, who not agreeing in judgement with the other two, he removed to Charltown, where also not agreeing with those godly Christians there that were for Reformation, after one years stay in the Country he returned for England. But Mr. Higginson and Mr. Skelton, in pursuance of the ends of their coming over into this Wilderness, acquainted the Goverour Mr. Endicot, and the rest of the godly People whom they found Inhabitants of the place, and

and the chief of the Passengers that came over with them, with their professed intentions, and consulted with them about settling a Reformed Congregation; from whom they found a general and hearty Concurrence, so that after some Conference together about this matter, they pitched upon the 6th of *August* for their entring into a solemn Covenant with God, and one another, and also for the Ordaining of their Ministers; of which they gave notice to the Church of *Plimouth* (that being the onely Church that was in the Country before them) the people made choice of Mr. *Skelton* for their Pastor, and Mr. *Higginson* for their Teacher. And accordingly it was desired of Mr. *Higginson* to draw up a Confession of Faith and Covenant in Scripture-language; which being done, was agreed upon. And because they foresaw that this Wildernes might be looked upon as a place of Liberty, and therefore might in time be troubled with erroneous spirits, therefore they did put in one Article into the *Confession of Faith* on purpose about the *Duty and Power of the Magistrate in Matters of Religion*. Thirty Copies of the foresaid *Confession of Faith and Covenant* being written out for the use of thirty persons who were to begin the Work. When the sixth of *August* came, it was kept as a day of Fasting and Prayer, in which after the Sermons and Prayers of the two Ministers, in the end of the day, the foresaid *Confession of Faith and Covenant* being solemnly read, the forenamed persons did solemnly profess their Consent thereunto; and then proceeded to the Ordaining of Mr. *Skelton* Pastor, and Mr. *Higginson* Teacher of the Church there. Mr. *Bradford* the Governour of *Plimouth*, and some others with him, coming by Sea, were hindred by croſſe winds that they could not be there at the beginning of the day, but they came into the Assembly afterward, and gave them the right hand of fellowship, wishing all prosperity, and a blessed success unto such good beginnings. After which, at several times many others joyned to the Church in the same way. The *Confession of Faith and Covenant* foremention'd, was acknowledgd onely as a Direction pointing unto that Faith and Covenant contained

in the holy Scripture, and therefore no man was confined unto that form of words, but onely to the Substance, End and Scope of the matter contained therin: And for the Circumstantial manner of joyning to the Church, it was ordered according to the wisdome and faithfulness of the Elders; together with the liberty and ability of any person. Hence it was, that some were admitted by expressing their Consent to that written *Confession of Faith and Covenant*; others did answer to questions about the Principles of Religion that were publickly propounded to them; some did present their Confession in writing, which was read for them; and some that were able and willing, did make their Confession in their own words and way: A due respect was also had unto the Conversations of men, viz. that they were without Scandal. But some of the Passengers that came over at the same time, observing that the Ministers did not at all use the Book of *Common-Prayer*; and that they did administer Baptism and the Lords Supper without the Ceremonies, and that they professed also to use Discipline in the Congregation against scandalous persons; by a personal application of the Word of God as the case might require, and that some that were scandalous were denied admission into the Church, they began to raise some trouble: of these Mr. Samuel Brown and his Brother were the chief, the one being a Lawyer, the other a Merchant; both of them amongst the number of the first Patentees, men of Estates, and men of Parts and port in the place. These two Brothers gathered a Company together in a place distinct from the publick Assembly, and there sundry times the Book of *Common-Prayer* was read unto such as reported thither. The Governour Mr. Endicott taking notice of the disturbance that began to grow amongst the people by this means, he convened the two Brothers before him. They accused the Ministers as departing from the Orders of the Church of England, that they were Separatists, and would be Anabaptists, &c. but for themselves, they would hold to the Orders of the Church of England. The Ministers answered for themselves, They were neither Separatists nor Anabaptists;

they

they did not separate from the Church of England, nor from the Ordinances of God there, but onely from the Corruptions and Disorders there; and that they came away from the Common-Prayer and Ceremonies, and had suffered much for their Non-Conformity in their Native Land, and therefore being in a place where they might have their liberty, they neither could nor would use them, because they judged the imposition of these things to be sinful Corruptions in the Worship of God. The Governour and Council, and the generality of the people, did well approve of the Ministers Answer: and therefore finding those two Brothers to be of high Spirits, and their speeches and practises tending to Mutiny and Faction, the Governour told them, That New-England was no place for such as they; and therefore he sent them both back for England at the return of the Ships the same year: and though they breathed out Threatnings both against the Governour and Ministers there, yet the Lord so disposed of all, that there was no further inconvenience followed upon it.

The two Ministers there being seriously studious of Reformation, they considered of the state of their Children, together with their Parents; concerning which, Letters did pass between Mr. Higginson, and Mr. Brewster the reverend Elder of the Church of Plimouth; and they did agree in their judgements, viz: concerning the *Church-Membership* of the Children with their parents, and that Baptism was a seal of their *Membership*, only when they were Adult, they being not scandalous, they were to be examined by the *Church-Officers*, and upon their approbation of their fitness, and upon the Childrens publick and personal owning of the Covenant, they were to be received unto the Lords Supper. Accordingly Mr. Higginson's eldest Son, being about fifteen years of age, was owned to have been received a member together with his Parents, and being privately examined by the Pastor Mr. Skelton, about his knowledge in the principles of Religion, he did present him before the Church when the Lords Supper was to be Administred, and the Childe then publickly and personally owning the Covenant of

the God of his Father, he was admitted unto the Lords Supper: it being then professedly owned, according to *i Cor. 7. 14.* that the Children of the Church are holy unto the Lord, as well as their Parents, accordingly the Parents owning and retaining the Baptism, which they themselves received in their Infancy, in their Native Land, as they had any Children born, Baptism was administred unto them, *viz.* to the Children of such as were members of that particular Church.

Mr. *Higginson* lived but one year after the settling of the Church there, departed this life about the same time the next year, in the Month of *August*, 1630. Mr. *Skelton* lived until the year 1634. when he also quietly slept in the Lord, and were both buried at *Salem*. As it is an honour to be in Christ before others, as in *Rom. 16.* so also to be first in the Lords work; and to be faithful in it, as these two holy men were; who made such a beginning in *Church-reformation*, as was afterwards followed by many others.

In the year 1634. Mr. *Roger Williams* removed from *Plimouth* to *Salem*: he had lived about three years at *Plimouth*, where he was well accepted as an assistant in the Ministry to Mr. *Ralph Smith*, then Pastor of the Church there, but by degrees venting of divers of his own singular opinions, and seeking to impose them upon others, he not finding such a concurrence as he expected, he desired his dismission to the Church of *Salem*, which though some were unwilling to, yet through the prudent counsel of Mr. *Brewster*, (the ruling Elder there) fearing that his continuance amongst them might cause divisions, and there being then many able men in the Bay, they would better deal with him then themselves could, and foreseeing(what he professed he feared concerning Mr. *Williams*, which afterwards came to pass) that he would run the same course of rigid Separation and Anabaptistry, which Mr. *John Smith* the Sebaptist at *Amsterdam* had done; the Church of *Plimouth* consented to his dismission, and such as did adhere to him were also dismissed, and removed with him, or not long after him to *Salem*. He came to *Salem* in the time of Mr. *Skeltons* weakness, who

who lived not long after Mr. Williams was come, whereupon after some time, the Church there called him to office; but he having in one years time, filled that place with principles of rigid separation, and tending to Anabaptistry, the prudent Magistrates of the *Massachusetts* Jurisdiction, sent to the Church of Salem, desiring them to forbear calling him to office, which they not hearkening to, was a cause of much disturbance; for Mr. Williams had begun, and then being in office, he proceeded more vigorously to vent many dangerous opinions, as amongst many others these were some; *That it is not lawful for an unregenerate man to pray, nor to take an Oath, and in special, not the Oath of Fidelity to the Civil Government; nor was it lawful for a godly man to have communion either in Family Prayer, or in an Oath with such as they judged unregenerate: and therefore he himself refused the Oath of Fidelity, and taught others so to do;* also, *That it was not lawful so much as to hear the godly Ministers of England, when any occasionally went thither, & therefore he admonished any Church-members that had done so, as for hainous sin: also he spake dangerous words against the Patent, which was the foundation of the Government of the *Massachusetts* Colony: also he affirmed, That the Magistrates had nothing to do in matters of the first Table, but only the second; and that there should be a general and unlimited Toleration of all Religions, and for any man to be punished for any matters of his Conscience, was persecution.* And further he procured the Church of Salem's consent unto letters of Admonition, which was written and sent by him in their name, to the Churches at Boston, Charlestown, New-town (now Cambridge) &c. accusing the Magistrates that were members of the respective Churches, of sundry hainous offences which he laid unto their charge, and though divers did acknowledge their error and gave satisfaction, yet Mr. Williams himself, notwithstanding all the pains that was taken with him by Mr. Cottin, Mr. Hooker, and many others, to bring him to a sight of his errors and miscarriages; and notwithstanding all the Courts gentle proceedings with him, he not only persisted, but grew more violent in his way, insomuch as he staying

at home in his own house, sent a Letter, which was delivered and read in the publick Church assembly, the scope of which was to give them notice, *That if the Church of Salem would not separate not only from the Churches of Old-England, but the Churches of New-England too, he would separate from them*: the more prudent and sober part of the Church being amazed at his way, could not yield unto him: whereupon he never came to the Church Assembly more, professing separation from them as Antichristian, and not only so, but he withdrew all private religious Communion from any that would hold Communion with the Church there, insomuch as he would not pray nor give thanks at meals with his own wife nor any of his family, because they went to the Church Assemblies: divers of the weaker sort of the Church-members, that had been throughly leavened with his Opinions, of which number were divers women that were zealous in their way, did by degrees fall off to him, insomuch as he kept a meeting in his own house, unto which a numerous company did resort, both on the Sabbath day and at other times, in way of separation from, and opposition to the Church Assembly there; which the prudent Magistrates understanding, and seeing things grow more and more towards a general division and disturbance, after all other means used in vain, they passed a sentence of Banishment against him out of the *Massachusetts* Colony, as against a disturber of the peace, both of the Church and Common-wealth.

After which Mr. Williams sat down in a place called *Providence*, out of the *Massachusetts* Jurisdiction, and was followed by many of the members of the Church of *Salem*, who did zealously adhere to him, and who cried out of the Persecution that was against him: some others also resorted to him from other parts. They had not been long there together, but from rigid separation they fell to Anabaptistry, renouncing the Baptism which they had received in their Infancy, and taking up another Baptism, and so began a Church in that way; but Mr. Williams stopped not there long, for after some time he told the people that had followed him, and joyned with him in a new Baptism,
that

that he was out of the way himself, and had mis-led them, for he did not finde that there was any upon earth that could administer Baptism, and therefore their last Baptism was a nullity, as well as their first; and therefore they must lay down all, and wait for the coming of new Apostles: and so they dissolved themselves, and turned Seekers, keeping that one Principle, That every one should have liberty to Worship God according to the Light of their own Consciences; but otherwise not owning any Churches or Ordinances of God any where upon Earth.

Thus much was thought meet to be inserted here concerning the great and lamentable Apostacy of Mr. Williams, that it may be a Warning to all others to take heed of a gradual declining from, and forsaking the Churches of Christ, and Ordinances of God in them, lest they be left of God to run such a course as he hath done; *Wherefore let him that thinks he stands, take heed lest he fall, 1 Cor. 10. 12.* As also to be a Motive to the Saints, to remember him unto God in their fervent Prayers for his return, he having been sometimes an able Dispenser of the Word of God, and (in several respects) of an exemplary Conversation.

And yet that there may be a standing Evidence of the Care that was had in those times to prevent the growth of Errours, and of the exercise of the Communion of Churches for that end, it is thought meet further to insert this passage: That before the putting forth of the Civil Power of the Magistrate for the removing of Mr. Williams from Salem, and besides other means also used, there was a publick Admonition sent in writing from the Church of Boston to the Church of Salem, for the reducing of Mr. Williams, and the erring part of the Church. The Title of the Writing was,

*Errors in Doctrine maintained by some of the Brethren
of the Church of Salem, tending to the disturbance
of Religion and Peace in Family, Church and Com-
monwealth; viz.*

1. That it is not lawful to call upon an unregenerate man to pray for himself.
2. It is not lawful for a regenerate man to pray with his carnal Family.
3. It is not lawful for Magistrates to take an Oath of Fidelity from unregenerate men.
4. It is not lawful for Magistrates to take an Oath of Fidelity from the body of their Subjects, though regenerate, and Members of Churches.
5. It is not lawful for Magistrates to punish the breaches of the first Table, unless thereby the Civil Peace of the Commonwealth be disturbed.

Whence also it follows, and is confessed,

That a Church wholly declining into Arianism, Papism, Familism, or other Heresies, being admonished, and convinced thereof by other Churches, and not reforming, may not be reformed by the Civil Magistrate in a way of Civil Justice, unless it break the Civil Peace.

These Errors were solidly confuted, and the contrary Truths asserted by the Word of God, in that Writing which was Subscribed by

John Cotton Teacher of the Church of Boston.

Thomas Oliver } Elders of the same Church.

Thomas Leverett }

*Mr. Wilson the Pastor of the Church being at that time absent
upon a Voyage to England.*

1630.

This Year it pleased God of his rich grace to Transport over into the Bay of the *Massachusetts* divers honourable Personages, and many worthy Christians, whereby the Lord began in a manifest manner and way to make known the great thoughts which he had of Planting the Gospel in this remote and barbarous Wildernes, and honouring his own Way of Instituted Worship, causing such and so many to adhere thereunto, and fall upon the practice thereof. Among the rest, a chief one amongst them was that famous Patern of Piety and Justice Mr. *John Winthrop*, the first Goverour of that Jurisdiction, accompanied with divers other precious Sons of *Sion*, which might be compared to the most fine gold. Amongst whom also I might name that Reverend and Worthy man, Mr. *John Wilson*, eminent for Love and Zeal; he likewise came over this year, and bare a great share of the difficulties of these new beginnings with great chearfulness and alacrity of spirit: They came over with a Fleet of ten Ships, three of them arriving first at *Salem*, in which several of the chiefeſt of them came, who repaired ſundry of them in ſome ſhort time into the Bay of the *Massachusetts*; the other ſeven Ships arrived at *Charlſtown*, where it pleased the Lord to exercise them with much ſickneſs, and being deſtitute of houſing and ſhelter, and lying up and down in Booths, ſome of them languished and died: yea, it pleased God to take away amongst the rest, that bleſſed Servant of Christ Mr. *Isaac Johnson*, with his Lady, ſoon after their arrival, with ſundry other precious Saints. This ſickneſs being heavy upon them, caused the principal of them to propoſe to the reſt to ſet a day apart to ſeek the Lord, for the affwaging of his diſpleaſure therein, as also for direc‐tion and guidance in the ſolemn enterprize of entring into Church-fellowſhip; which ſolemn day of Humiliation was obſerved by all, not onely of themſelves, but also by their

Brethren at *Plimouth* in their behalf: and the Lord was intreated not onely to asswage the sicknes, but also encouraged their hearts to a beginning, and in some short time after to a further progres in the great Work of Erecting a way of Worshipping of Christ in Church-fellowship, according to Primitive Institution. Those choice and eminent Servants of Christ did not despise their poor Leaders and Fellow-souldiers that they found in the same Work of the Lord with them at *Plimouth*, but treated them as Brethren, much pitying their great straits and hardships they had endured in the first beginning of Planting this Wilderness, promising all helpfulesnes even out of their own Estates according to their power; and their said Brethren at *Plimouth* were perswaded they spake as they thought in their hearts: for, such was the simplicity of those times, as that divers faces were not carried under a hood; Pride, Covetousnes, Profanenes, and sinful Self, were ashamed to be seen, except in obscure places and persons. Oh poor *New-England*, consider what thou wast, and what thou now art! *Repent*, and do thy first works, saith the Lord; so may thy peace yet be as a river, and thy righteousness as the waves of the sea. So be it. But to return.

Ha. 48, 18, 19. The first that began in the work of the Lord above-mentioned, were their honoured Governoour Mr. *John Winthrop*; Mr. *Johnson* fore-named, that much honoured Gentleman Mr. *Thomas Dudley*, and Mr. *John Wilson* aforesaid: These four were the first that began that honourable Church of *Boston*, unto whom there joyned many others. The same year also Mr. *George Philips* (who was a worthy Servant of Christ, and Dispenser of his Word) began a Church-fellowship at *Watertown*; as did also Mr. *Maverick* and Mr. *Warcham* at *Dorchester* the same year.

Thus out of small beginnings greater things have been produced by his hand that made all things of nothing: and as one small Candle may light a thousand; so the Light here kindled hath shone unto many, yea in some sort to our whole Nation. Let the glorious Name of *Jehovah* have all the praise in all Ages.

I 6 3 1.

83

31

52

at Roxbury

This Year the Reverend and Usefull Instrument Mr. John Eliot came over, and not long after Mr. Weld, who began a Church-Society; as likewise good old Mr. Maverick and Mr. Wareham began one at Dorchester.

I 6 3 2.

This year one Sir Christopher Gardiner (being as himself said) descended of the house of Gardiner Bishop of Winchester, who was so great a Persecutor of Gods Saints in Queen Maries dayes, arrived in New-England; he being a great traveller received his first honor of Knight-hood at Jerusalem; being made Knight at the Sepulchre there; he came into these parts in pretence of forsaking the World, and to live a private life in a godly course, not unwilling to put himself upon any mean imployment, and take any pains for his living, and sometimes offered himself to joyn to the Church in sundry places; he brought over with him a servant or two, and a comely young woman whom he called his Cousin; but it was suspected (that after the Italian manner) she was his Concubine: he living at the Massachusetts, for some miscarriages for which he should have answered, fled away from Authority and got amongst the Indians in the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth; the Governour of the Massachusetts sent after him but could not get him, and promised some reward to those that should finde him; the Indians came to the Governour of Plimouth and told where he was, and asked if they might kill him, but the said Governour told them no, they should not kill him by no means, but if they could take him alive and bring him to Plimouth, they should be payed for their pains; they said he had a Gun and a

Rapier, and he would kill them if they went about it, and the *Massachusetts Indians* said they might kill him, bat the Governor aforesaid told them no, they should not kill him, but watch their opportunity and take him, and so they did ; for when they light on him by a River side, he got into a Cannoo to get from them, and when they came near him, whiles he presented his piece at them to keep them off, the stream carried the Cannoo against a Rock, and threw both him and his Piece and the Rapier into the water, yet he got out, and having a little dagger by his side, they durst not close with him ; but getting long poles, they soon beat his dagger out of his hand : so he was glad to yield, and they brought him to the Governor at *Plimouth*, but his hands and arms were swelled and very sore with the blows they had given him ; so he used kindly, and sent him to a lodging him, where his arms were bathed and annointed, and he was quickly well again, and blamed the *Indians* for beating him so much : they said they did but a little whip him with sticks. In his lodging those that made his bed, found a little Note-book that by accident had slipped out of his pocket or some private place, in which was a memorial what day he was reconciled to the *Pope* and *Church of Rome*, and in what University he took his *Scapula*, and such and such a Degree ; it being brought to the Governor, he kept it, and sent it to the Governor of the *Massachusetts* with word of his taking, who sent for him ; but afterwards he went for *England* and shewed his malice against *New-England*, but God prevented him ; of which I thought meet to insert a Letter from Mr. *Winthrop* Governor of the *Massachusetts* to Mr. *Bradford* the Governor of *Plimouth* (in reference to this matter) as also the Copy of an Order relating to the same as followeth. And first of the Letter.

SIR,
Upon a Petition exhibited by Sir Christopher Gardiner, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Captain Malon, &c. against you and us, the cause was heard before the Lords of the Privy

Privy Council; and afterwards reported to the King; the success whereof makes it evident to all, that the Lord hath care of his people here; the passages are admirable and too long to write: I heartily wish for an opportunity to impart them unto you, being many sheets of Paper; but the conclusion was, against all mens expectation, an order for our encouragement, and much blame and disgrace upon the adversaries, which calls for much thankfulness from us, all which we purpose (God willing) to express in a day of thanksgiving to our merciful God, I doubt not but you will consider if it be not fit for you to joyn in it; who as he hath humbled us by his late correction, so he hath lifted us up by an abundant rejoicing in our deliverance out of so desperate a danger; so as that which our enemies built their hopes upon to ruine us by, he hath mercifully disposed to our great advantage, as I shall further acquaint you when occasion shall serve.

The Copy of the Order follows.

At the Court at Whitehall, January 19. 1632.

Sigillum Crescent.

Lord Privy-Seal.

Mr. Trevers.

Earl of Dorset.

Mr. Vice-Chamberlain.

Lord Viscount Falkland.

Mr. Secretary Cook.

Lord Bishop of London.

Mr. Secretary Windbank.

Lord Nottingham.

WHereas his Majesty hath lately been informed of great distraction and much disorder in the Plantations in the parts of America called New-England, which if they be true, and suffered to run on, would tend to the dishonour of this Kingdome, and utter ruine of that

that Plantation: for prevention whereof, & for the orderly settling of Government, according to the intention of those Patents which have been granted by his *Majesty*, & from his late Royal Father King *James*; It hath pleased his *Majesty* that the Lords and others of his most honourable Privy Council should take the same into consideration: Their Lordships in the first place thought fit to make a Committee of this Board, to take examination of the matters informed: which Committee having called divers of the principal Adventurers in that Plantation, and heard those that are complainants against them; most of the things informed being denied, and resting to be proved by parties that must be called from that place, which required a long expence of time, and at present their Lordships finding they were upon dispatch of Men, Victuals and Merchandise for that place, all which would be at a stand if the Adventurers should have discouragement, or take suspition that the State here had no good opinion of that Plantation; their Lordships not laying the fault, or fancies (if any be) of some particular men upon the General Government, or principal Adventurers, which in due time is further to be enquired into; have thought fit in the mean time to declare, that the appearances were so fair, and hopes so great, that the Country would prove both beneficial to this Kingdome, and profitable to the particulars, as that the Adventurers had cause to go on cheerfully with their undertakings, and rest assured, if things were carried as was pretended when the Patents were granted, and accordingly as by the Patents it is appointed, His *Majesty* would not only maintain the Liberties and priviledges heretofore granted,

granted, but supply any thing further that might tend to the good Government, prosperity and comfort of His people there of that place, &c.

William Tromball.

1633.

This Year Mr. Edward Winslow was Chosen Governor of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth: And

Mr. William Bradford,
Captain Miles Standish, }
Mr. John Howland, } were Chosen to be his Assistants
Mr. John Alden, } in Government.
Mr. John Dove,
Mr. Stephen Hopkins, & }
Mr. William Gilson,

The Plantation of Plimouth having had some former converse with the Dutch, as hath been hinted, they seeing them seated in a barren quarter, told them of a River called by them the Fresh River, which they often commended unto them for a good place, both for Plantation and Trade, and wished them to make use of it; but their hands being full otherwise, they let it passe: but afterwards there coming a company of Indians into these parts, that were driven out of their Country by the potency of the Pequots, they sollicited them to go thither. These Indians not seeing them very forward to entertain the motion, which they moved with great ardency, they sollicited them of the Government of the Massachusetts in like sort; but they being then not fit to entertain the motion, in respect that they were newly come into the Country, did not much regard

which is the same called Connecticut River.

it. Notwithstanding, some of the chief made a motion to joyn with some herein a way of Trade at the same River; on which a meeting was appointed to treat concerning the same matter, and some of *Plimonth* appointed to give them meeting, which they did; but they cast in the way many fears of danger and loss, and the like, on which they of the *Massachusetts* declined the thing, and did not proceed therein. Whereupon, those of *Plimonth* went on alone, and prepared a Frame of an House, and stowed it into a Barque, ready to rear at their landing, and went up the said River, and reared their House, and fenced it about with a Pallisado, which was done with great difficulty, not onely of the *Dutch*, but also of the *Indians*.

Notwithstanding, the place they possessed themselves of, was such as the *Dutch* had nothing to do with, and likewise was lawfully purchased of the *Indians* which they carried with them. And this was *Plimonths* entrance there, who deserved to have held it, and not by friends to have been thrust out, as in a sort they afterwards were.

This year it pleased God to visit *Plimonth* with an infectious Feaver, of which many fell very sick; and upwards of twenty died, men, women and children, and sundry of them were of their ancient Friends; amongst the rest, Mr. *Samuel Fuller* then died, after he had much helped others, and was a comfort to them: he was their Chirurgeon and Physician, and did much good in his place, being not onely usefull in his faculty, but otherwise as he was a godly man, and served Christ in the Office of a Deacon in the Church for many years, and forward to do good in his place, and was much missed after God removed him out of this world.

This sickness caused much sadness amongst them, and according to their duty they besought the Lord by Fasting and Prayer, and he was intreated of them, and towards Winter the sickness ceased. This sickness being a kinde of a pestilent Feaver, swept away also many of the *Indians* from many places near adjoyning to *Plimonth*.

It is to be observed, That the Spring before this sickness,
there

there was a numerous company of *Flies*, which were like for bigness unto *Wasps* or *Bumble Bees*, they came out of little holes in the ground, and did eat up the green things, and made such a constant yelling noise as made all the Woods ring of them, and ready to deaf the hearers; they were not any of them heard or seen by the *English* in the Country before this time: but the *Indians* told them that sickness would follow, and so it did very hot in the Months of *June, July and August* of that Summer.

This year there arrived in *New-England* those three worthy Instruments, Mr. *John Cotton*, Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, and Mr. *Samuel Stone*, who were Gospel-Preachers of excellent worth and use in their places, untill God took them out of the world unto himself.

This year likewise Mr. *William Collier* arrived with his Family in *New-England*, who as he had been a good Benefactor to the Colony of *New-Plimouth* before he came over, having been an Adventurer unto it at its first beginning; so also he approved himself a very useful Instrument in that Jurisdiction after he arrived, being frequently Chosen, and for divers years serving God and the Country in the place of Magistracy; and lived a godly and holy life untill old Age, which to him is a *Crown of Glory*, being found in the way of Righteousness.

Peter Easton lived and
died in New-England
N^o 2 Decr 1634.
then he died

1634.

THIS Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Goverour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth: His Assistants in Government were

25 of march this year
we came aboyrd the ship
at southhampton to come
for New England Peter Easton
John Easton and their father

Mr. William Bradford,
Mr. Edward Winflow,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. John Alden,
Mr. John Howland, and
Mr. Stephen Hopkins.

A great sickness
amongst the Indians.

In the Spring of this Year there fell a very great sicknes of the Small Pox amongst the Indians, so as they died most miserably of it; for a sorer Disease cannot come amongst them, and they dread it more then the Plague it self, for usually those of them which have this Disease, have them in abundance, and for want of Bedding and Linen, and other Necessaries, they fall into a lamentable condition; for as they lye on their hard Mats, the Pox breaking and running one into another, their skin cleaving by reason thereof to the Mats they lye on, when they turn them, much of their skin will flay off at once, and they will be all on a gore blood, most sad and grievous to behold; and then being very sore, what with cold and other distempers, they die like rotten sheep.

14 of may
Nicholas Easton
with his two
sons Peter &
John came
ashore in New
England

This Year one Captain Stone, who had sometimes lived at Christopher's in the West-India's, came into these parts; of whom I have nothing to speak in way of commendation, but rather the contrary. After he had been to and fro in the Country, he returned towards Virginia with one Captain Norson; and so it was, that as they returned they went in at Connecticut River, where the Indians killed the said Stone as he lay in his Cabbin, and threw a Covering over him; they likewise

wife killed all the rest of his Company but the said Captain Norton, he defending himself a long time in the Cook-room of the Barque, untill by accident the Gunpowder took fire, which for readines he had set in an open thing before him, which did so burn and scald him, and blinde his eyes, as he could make no longer resistance, but was slain also by them, and they made a prey of his goods.

It is to be obserued, That the said Stone being at the Dutch Plantation in the fore-part of this year, a certain Barque of Plimonth being there likewise on Trading, he kept company with the Dutch Governour, and made him drunk, and got leave of him in his drunkeunes to take the said Barque, without any occasion or cause given him; and so taking his time when the Merchant and some of the chief of the men were on shore, with some of his own men, made the rest of them weigh Anchor, and set sail to carry her away to Virginia: but some of the Dutch Seamen, who had been at Plimouth and received kindnes, seeing this horrible abuse, got a Vessel or two and pursued them, and brought them back. After this he came into the Massachusets Bay, where they commenced Suit against him; but by the mediation of some it was taken up, and afterwards in the company of some Gentlemen he came to Plimouth, and was kindly entertained: but Revenge boiling in his breast, (as some conceived) he watched a season to have stabbed the Governour, and put his hand to his Dagger for that end, but by Gods Providence ordering the vigilance of some that were about him, he was prevented; but God met with him for these and other wickedneses, as hath been before related.

This year the Eastons wintered at Gosnich one whole winter and the summer before part of it

1635.

THIS year Mr. William Bradford was chosen Governor of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth. And

*The beginning
of this year we
came to Nibbery*

Mr. Edward Winslow, Mr. Thomas Prince, Mr. William Collier, Captain Standish, Mr. John Alden, Mr. John Howland, and Mr. Stephen Hopkins,	Were Chosen to be his Assistants in Government.
--	--

This Year Mr. Edward Winslow took a Voyage for England, on publick occasions, and it came to pass that he had occasion to answer some Complaints made against the Country, at the Council Board ; more chiefly concerning the Massachusetts Jurisdiction, which he did to good effect, and further prosecuted such things as might tend to the good of the whole : in particular he preferred a Petition to the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners for the Plantations in America, in reference unto some injuries done by the French and Dutch unto the Country ; which Petition found good acceptance, and was in a way to a satisfactory Answer : but sundry Adversaries interposed, whose ends were the subversion and overthrow of the Churches, at least to disturb their peace, and hinder their growth, but by Gods providence it so fell out in the end, that although those Adversaries crossed the Petition for taking any further effect in the end principally intended in it ; yet by this as a means, the whole plot was discovered, and those Adversaries came to nothing : the particulars whereof, are too long here to be inserted.

This Year, on Saturday the fifteenth day of August, was such a mighty storm of Wind and Rain, as none now living in

*on saturday night forty year after came much
the like storme blew downe our windmill and
did much harme the 28 of august 1635*

these parts, either English or Indian had seen the like, being like unto those *Hirracanes* or *Tuffins* that writers mention to be sometimes in the *Indies*. It began in the morning a little before day, and grew not by degrees, but came with great violence in the beginning, to the great amazement of many; It blew down sundry houses, and uncovered divers others: divers Vessels were lost at Sea in it, and many more in extream danger. It caused the Sea to swell in some places to the southward of *Plimouth*, as that it arose to twenty foot right up and down, and made many of the Indians to climb into Trees for their safety: It threw down all the Corn to the ground, which never rose more; the which through the mercy of God, it being near harvest time, was not lost, though much the worse: and had the wind continued without shifting, in likelihood it would have drowned some part of the Country. It blew down many hundred thousands of Trees, turning up the stronger by the roots, and breaking the high Pine Trees and such like in the midst, and the tall young Oaks, and Walnut Trees of good bigness, were wound as a Wyth by it; very strange and fearful to behold: It began in the Southeast, and veered sundry wayes, but the greatest force of it at *Plimouth*, was from the former quarter, it continued not in extremity above five or six hours, ere the violence of it began to abate; the marks of it will remain this many years, in those parts where it was forest; the Moon suffered a great Eclipse two nights after it.

This year the Eastons went in the spring to Newbeire then cal'd agawom and ther builded and planted this was the first seafling of that towne lying on the ~~Neare~~ side of mettacasse River in NewEngland

The great storm
or Hirracane.

1636.

1636.

THIS Year Mr. Edward Winflow was chosen Governour of the Jurisdiction of Plimouth: And

Mr. William Bradford,
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. John Alden,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. Stephen Hopkins,

were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.

Mr. William
Cooper cast a-
way.

This Year the Towns on the River of Connecticut began to be planted, and in transporting of Goods thither, from the Massachusetts Bay, two shalloppe were cast away (loaden with Goods to go thither) in an Easterly storm, at the mouth of Plimouth Harbour; the Boats men were all lost, not so much as any of their bodies found for burial, they being five in number in both the Boats: the Principal of them was one Mr. William Cooper, an antient Seaman of known skill, having formerly been Master of a ship, and had gone great Voyages to the East-Indies and to other parts, but the night being dark and stormy, they ran upon the skirt of a flat that lieth near the mouth of the harbour, and so were over-raked; the goods came on shore along the Harbour, and the Governour caused a careful course to be taken for the preservation of them in the behalf of the right owners, who afterwards received so many of them as were saved.

The Relation of
the Pequot
Wars.

Now followeth the Tragedy of the War that fell betwixt the English and the Pequots, which I will relate according to my best intelligence; in order whereunto I thought good to mention some particulars first, that by discerning the whole matter, in the several parts and circumstances, the more

and although the *English* went to the *Pequots*, and had some parly with them, yet they did but delude them ; and the *English* returned without doing any thing to purpose, being frustrate of their opportunity by their deceit : After the *English* of the *Massachusetts* were returned, the *Pequots* took their time and opportunity to cut off some of the *English* at *Connecticott*, as they passed up and down upon their occasions ; and tortured some of them in putting them to death, in a most horrid and barbarous manner : and most Blasphemously in this their cruelty, bad them call upon their God, or mocked and derided them when they so did ; and not long after assaulted them at their houses and habitations, as will appear more fully in the ensuing Relation.

The Pequots
horrible Blas-
phemy.

1 6 3 7.

IN the fore-part of this Year, the *Pequots* fell openly upon the *English* at *Connecticott*, in the lower parts of the River, and slew sundry of them as they were at work in the fields, both men and women, to the great terror of the rest ; and went away in great pride and triumph with many threats ; they also assaulted *Seabrook* Fort, at the mouth of the River of *Connec-*
ticott, although it was strong and well defended ; it struck them with much fear and astonishment, to see their bold attempts in the face of danger, which made them in all places to stand upon their guard, and to prepare for resistance, and earnestly to sollicite their friends and confederates in the *Massachusetts* Bay, to send them speedy aid, for they looked for more forceable assaults : Mr. *Vane* being then Governor of that Jurisdiction, writ from their General Court to the Governor and Court of *New-Plimouth*, to joyn with them in this War, to which they were cordially willing : In the mean time, before things could be prepared for to set out, the *Pequots* (as they had done the winter before) sought to make peace with the *Narrha-*

gansets, and used many pernicious Arguments to move them thereto, as That the English were strangers, and began to overspread their Country, and would deprive them thereof in time, if they were suffered to grow and increase; and if the Narragansets did assist the English to subdue them, that did but make way for their own overthrow; for if they were rooted out, the English would soon take occasion to subjugate them; and if they would hearken to them, they should not need to fear the strength of the English: for they would not come to open Battel with them, but fire their Houses, kill their Cattel, and lye in ambush for them as they went abroad upon their occasions; and all this they might easily do with little danger to themselves: the which course being held, they well saw the English would not long subside, but they would either be starved with hunger, or forced to forsake the Country: with many like things; insomuch that the Narragansets were once wavering, and were half minded to have made peace with them; and joyned against the English; but again when they considered how much wrong they had received from the Pequots, and what an opportunity they now had by helping the English, to right themselves, revenge was so sweet to them, as it prevailed above all the rest; so as they resolved to joyn with the English against them, and so did. The Court of Plimouth agreed to fende fifty men at their own charge, and with as much speed as possibly they could get them in a readiness, under sufficient Leaders, and provided a Barque to carry their provisions, and to tend upon them on all occasions, and when they were ready to march with a supply from the Bay, they had word sent them to stay, for the Enemy was as good as vanquished and there would be no need.

I shall not take upon me exactly to describe their Proceedings in this War, because possibly it hath been done by themselves that were Actors therein, and best knew the Circumstances of things: I shall therefore set them down in the main and general, according to my best Intelligence.

From Connecticut, who were most sensible of the hurt sustained and the preuent danger, they set out a party of men, and

and another party met them from the *Massachusets* Bay at the *Narragansets*, who were to joyn with them. The *Narragansets* were very earnest to be gone, before the *English* were well rested and refreshed, especially some of them which came last: It should seem their desire was to come upon the Enemy suddenly and unexpectedly. There being a Barque of *Plimsooth* newly put in there, which was come from *Connēcticōt*, they did encourage them to lay hold of the opportunity of the *Indians* forwardness, and to shew as great forwardness as they, for it would encourage them, and Expedition might turn to their great advantage: So they went on, and so ordered their march, as the *Indians* brought them to the Fort of their Enemy (in which most of their chief men were) before day: They approached the same with great silence, and surrounded it both with *English* and *Indians*, that they might not break out, and so assaulted them with great Courage, shooting amongst them, and entred the Fort with great speed; and those that first entred found sharp resistance from the Enemy, who both shot and grappled with them: Others ran into their houses, and brought out fire and set them on fire, which soon took in their Mats, and their houses standing close together, with the wind all was soon on a flame, and thereby more were burnt to death than were otherwise slain. It burnt their Bow-strings, and made them unserviceable. Those that escaped the Fire were slain with the Sword; some hewed to pieces, others run through with their Rapiers, so as they were quickly dispatched, and very few escaped: The Number they thus destroyed, was conceived to be above Four hundred. At this time is was a fearful sight to see them thus frying in the Fire, and the streams of Blood quenching the same; and horrible was the stink and scent thereof: but the Victory seemed a sweet Sacrifice, and they gave the praise thereof to God, who had wrought so wonderfully for them, thus to enclose their Enemies in their hands, and give them so speedy Victory over so proud, insulting, and blasphemous an Enemy. The *Narragansets* all this while stood round about a loof off from all danger, and left

*They praise
God for giving
them the victory*

the whole Execution to the *English*, except it were the stopping any that brake away, insulting over their Enemies in their ruines and misery, when they saw them dancing in the Fire; calling by a word in their own Language, signifying *O brave Pequots!* which they used familiarly amongst themselves in their own praises, in Songs of Triumph after their Victories.

After this Service was thus happily accomplished, the *English* marched to the water-side, where they met with some of their Vessels, by whom they were refreshed, and supplied with Vituals and other Necessaries: But in their march, the rest of the *Pequots* drew into a Body, and followed them, thinking to have some advantage against them by reason of a Neck of Land; but when they saw the *English* prepare for them, they kept aloof, so as they neither did hurt, nor would receive any. And after the *English* their refreshing, and repairing together for further Counsel and Directions, they resolved to pursue their Victory, and follow the War against the rest: but the *Narragansets* most of them forsook them, and such of them as they had with them for Guides or otherwise, they found very cold or backward in the businesse, either out of envy, or that they thought the *English* would make more profit of the Victory then they were willing they should, or else deprive them of that advantage that they desired, in making the *Pequots* become Tributaries unto them, or the like.

For the rest of this Tragedy, I shall onely relate the same as it is in a Letter from Mr. *Winthrop* to Mr. *Bradford*, as followeth:

I Received your loving Letter, but straitness of time forbids me: for my desire is to acquaint you with the Lords great mercy towards us, in our prevailing against his and our Enemies, that you may rejoice and praise his Name with us. About four-score of our men having coasted along towards the Dutch Plantation, sometimes by Water, but most by land, met here and there with some

some Pequots, whom they slew or took Prisoners. Two Sachems they took and beheaded; and not hearing of Sasacus the chief Sachem, they gave a Prisoner his life to go and finde him out: He went, and brought them word where he was; but Sasacus suspecting him to be a Spy, after he was gone, fled away with some twenty more to the Mohawks, so our men missed of him: yet dividing themselves, and ranging up and down as the Providence of God guided them, for the Indians were all gone save three or four, and they knew not whither to guide them, or else would not; Upon the thirteenth of this Month they lighted upon a great Company, viz. Eighty strong men, and two hundred Women and children, in a small Indian Town fast by a hideous Swamp, which they all slipped into, before our men could get to them. Our Captains were not then come together, but there was Mr. Ludlow and Captain Mafon, with some ten of their men, and Captain Patrick with some twenty or more of his, who shooting at the Indians, Captain Trask with fifty more came soon in at the noise. Then they gave order to surround the Swamp, it being about a Mile round; but Lieutenant Davenport and some twelve more, not hearing that Command, fell into the Swamp amongst the Indians: The Swamp was so thick with Scrubs, and Boggie withall, that some stuck fast, and received many shot. Lieutenant Davenport was dangerously wounded about his Arm-hole, and another shot in the Head, so as fainting they were in great danger to have been taken by the Indians, but Sergeant Riggs and Sergeant Jeffery, and two or three more, rescued them, and slew divers of the Indians with their Swords. After they were drawn out, the Indians desired Parley, and were offered by Thomas Stanton our Interpreter, That if they would come out and yield themselves, they shold have their lives that had not their hand in the English Blood. Whereupon the Sachem of the place came forth, and an old man or two, and their Wives and children, and so they spake two hours, till it was night: Then Thomas Stanton was sent to them again, to call them forth, but they said they would sell their lives there; and so shot at him so thick, as if he had not been presently relieved and rescued on his crying out, they would have slain him. Then our men cut off a place of Swamp;

Swamp with their swords, and cooped up the Indians into a narrow compass, so as they could easer kill them through the thickets: so they continued all the night, standing about twelve foot one from another, and the Indians coming up close to our men, shot their Arrows so thick, as they pierced their Hat brims, and their sleeves and stockings, and other parts of their Clothes, yet so miraculously did the Lord preserve them, as not one of them was wounded, save those three who rashly went into the Swamp as aforesaid. When it was near day it grew very dark, so as those of them that were left, dropped away, though they stood but twelve or fourteen foot asunder, and were presently discovered and some killed in the pursuit. In the searching of the Swamp the next morning, they found nine slain, and some they pulled up, whom the Indians had buried in the Mire: so as they do think that of all this Company not twenty did escape, for they after found some who died in the flight of their wounds received. The Prisoners were divided, some to those of the River, and the rest to us of these parts. We send the Malt-children to Bermuda's by Mr. William Pierce, and the Women and Maid-children are disposed about in the Towns. There have been now slain and taken in all, about Seven hundred, the rest are dispersed, and the Indians in all quarters so terrified, as all their friends are afraid to receive them. Two of the Sachems of Long-Island came to Mr. Staughton, and tendered themselves to be under our Protection; and two of the Nepannet Sachems have been with me to seek our Friendship. Among the Prisoners we have the Wife and Children of Mononotto, a woman of a very modest countenance and behaviour: It was by her mediation that the two English Maids were spared from death, and were kindly used by her; so that I have taken charge of her. One of her first requests was, That the English would not abuse her body, and that her Children might not be taken from her. Those which were wounded we fetched soon off by John Gallop, who came with his Boat in an happy hour to bring them Victuals, and to carry their wounded men to the Barque, where our chief Chirurgion was with Mr. Wilson, being about eight leagues off. Our people are all in health, the Lord be praised: And although they had marched

in their Arms all the day, and had been in fight all the night; yet they professed they found themselves so, as they could willingly have gone to such another busines: the Captains report we have slain thirteen Sachems, but Saseus and Monotto are still living; this is the substance of what I have received, though I am forced to omit many considerable circumstances: so being in much straights of time, the ships being to depart within this four dayes, and in them the Lord Lee and Mr. Vane; I here break off, and with hearty Salutation, &c. I rest

Your assured Friend,

July 28. 1637. —

John Winthrop.

To conclude the discourse of this matter: This *Saseus* the Pequot Sachem, being fled to the *Mohawks*, they cut off his head, and some other of the chief of them, whether to satisfie the *English*, or rather the *Narragansets* (who as I have heard hired them to do it) or for their own advantage, I know not.

And thus this War took end; the body of this People were wholly subdued, and their Country taken from them, and such of its Inhabitants as had escaped the heat of our revenge, by fire and sword, being nevertheless at the dispose of the Conquerors, were by the *English* appointed some to the *Narragansets*, and some to the *Monhegens* under *Unkas* their Sachem, who had been faithful and serviceable to them in this War: yet the *Narragansets* were not pleased that themselves had not the sole Government of the Captives, and have since been continually quarrelling with the *Monheags*, and have sometimes been plotting against the *English* also; but to conclude, the *Pequots* have since been taken under the immediate Government of the *English Colonies*, and live in their own Country, being Governed by such of their own, as are by the *English* substituted and appointed for that purpose.

P. This

1638 This year Mr. William Bradford was chosen Governour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth: And

1638
 in the beginning of his yeare we N.E. & E.P. were to winneacnnewhamton did breifly Here
 Mr. Edward Winslow, Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
 Mr. William Collier, Mr. Thomas Prince,
 Capt. Myles Standish, Mr. John Jenny,

Were Chosen his Assistants in Government.

This Year Mr. Theophilus Eaton and Mr. John Davenport, accompanied with divers other Christians of special eminency, began the fourth of the United Colonies in New-England, called New-Haven, where they erected a Church of Christ, which continue in Gospel Order until this day, in an amiable and exemplary manner; notwithstanding they have met with divers losses and crosses, both of eminent and useful Instruments, as also of a great part of their estates, as in special by the losse of Mr. Lamberton's ship. Of which said Plantation and Colony, I have little to insert, for want of more full and certain intelligence.

Called by the Dutch
Rocabert and
by the Indians
Quinnapiuk.

About this time there arose great troubles in the Country, especially at Boston, by the breathing of Antinomian and Fanatical Opinions; the chief sect-leader thereof, was one Mrs. Hutchinson: these carried on their abominable Tenets, with such subtlety, under a pretence of advancing free-grace, and crying up the Covenant of Grace, and down the Covenant of Works; as they took away (by their assertions) Grace from the Covenant; yea so close was this mystery of Iniquity carried on, as that some of the prudentest of the Orthodox party, could not discern it at the first; but at length, the folly of those that were principal therein was made manifest unto all men; the evil consequences thereof faced very sadly, so as it influenced into their Civil State, and caused great disturbance: but by Gods blessing on the improvement of the faithful endeavours

of his Servants, the Messengers of the Churches, who were called together as a Synod to help in the case; together with the prudence and industry of sundry principal ones amongst them, both in Church and State at other times: a right understanding of some few things, in difference amongst the sincere and godly, was procured. The Ring-leaders of the Faction being thus detected were censured, not only by the Church, but by the Civil power, and were also condemned to exile; who not knowing where they might sit down safely, made requests unto the Government of *Plimouth*, that they might be at an Island, that they had not hitherto improved, called by the *Indians Aquinet*, (and by the English inhabiting it *Road-Island*) which the Government of *Plimouth* aforesaid, considering they were their Country-men and fellow Subjects that were thus distressed, and destitute of habitation, although they had their errors in as great dislike as those from whence they came; yet pitying them in their present straits, granted their request: so these having there seated themselves, and finding that it was a very fruitful and pleasant place, (such indeed, as that Colony or Jurisdiction hath not any the like left within their Patents) they soon drew many more unto them, not only to fill up that Island, but have also seated two more Towns on the Main; therein (as is judged) incroaching upon the just rights of the aforesaid Colony of *Plimouth*, and have of late through mis-information obtained a Patent, not only for the places foremented, but have also extended it into the heart and bowels of the known & possessed rights of the said Colony: endeavoring to requite their kindness, as sometimes it is said the Hedge-hog did by the friendly Coney. But it is our great happiness, that as God takes notice from on high of the unrighteousness and oppression of the sons of men, so he hath given us a gracious Prince, who mindes the peace of His meanest Subjects, from whose Justice and Prudence we do confidently expect relief, and on that assurance do resolve by Gods help to contain our selves from seeking to vindicate our wrongs in such a way as their injurious dealings might provoke unto.

This Year there was a hideous *Monster* born at *Boston* in *New-England*, of one Mrs. *Mary Dyer*, a Co-partner with the said Mrs. *Hutchinson*, in the aforesaid Heresies; the said *Monster* (as it was related to me) It was without Head, but Horns like a Beast, Scales or a rough skin like the fish called the Thorn-back, it had Leggs and Claws like a Fowl, and in other respects as a Woman Childe: the Lord declaring his detestation of their Monstrous errors (as was then thought by some) by this prodigious Birth.

Not long before these Troubles, there arrived at *Boston* one *Samuel Gorton*, who from thence came to *Plimouth*; and upon his first coming thither, gave some hopes that he would have proved an useful Instrument, but soon after, by little and little, discovered himself to be a proud and pestilent Seducer, and deeply leavened with blasphemous and *Familistical Opinions*: and observing such Fictions to be spread by some of his Spirit already in the Country, he takes his opportunity to begin to sowe such seed at *Plimouth*, whereby some were seduced, in special one *John Weeks* and his Wife, who in some short time became very Atheists, looking for no more happiness then this world affords, not onely in practice such, but also in opinion. But the said *Gorton* falling into some Controversie with one Mr. *Ralph Smith*, was summoned to the Court held at *Plimouth* the fourth of December 1638. to Answer the said Mr. *Smiths* Complaint; and there he carried so mutinous and seditiously, as that he was for the same, and for his turbulent carriages towards both Magistrates and Ministers in the presence of the Court, Sentenced to finde Sureties for his good Behaviour, during the time he should stay in the Jurisdiction, which was limited to fourteen dayes; and also Amerced to pay a considerable Fine. In some short time after he departed to *Road-Island*, and in like manner or worse demeaned himself there, so as they were forced to Sentence him to suffer Corporal Punishment by *Whipping*, and they Banished him likewise off the Island. And from thence he with divers of his Accomplices went to *Providence*, and there he and they carried so

in outrage and riotously, as they were in danger to have caused Bloodshed, so as the Inhabitants some of them, viz. Mr. Roger Williams and others, were constrained to sollicite the Government of the *Massachusets* for aid, and help them against their Insolencies: And for that end, some of them desired to come under their Jurisdiction, and were accepted. Moreover, several of the poor Neighbouring Natives were so injuriously wronged by them the said *Gorton* and his Company, they seeking to bereave them of their just Rights of Lands by surreptitious wayes; in special, *Pomham* and *Sokanoko*, two petty *Sachems* living not farre off from *Providence*, who were bereaved of their just Rights in Lands, by improving the Tyranny of *Miantonomok*, the then chief *Sachem* of the *Narragansets*, for the procuring thereof, which necessitated the said under-Sachems to make their Appeal to the Court of the *Massachusetts* for help in their oppressed condition, subjecting themselves and their Lands unto their Jurisdiction likewise: which caused the said Government to Requiere their Appearance at *Boston*, to Answer the Complaints of those oppressed *English* and *Indians*. But notwithstanding they several times sent to them with all gentleness and courteous expressions, they neither appeared, nor sent satisfying Reasons for their absence; but instead thereof, many insolent, proud, railing, opprobrious Returns: so that the said Government saw there was no remedy, but to send force to constrain them to come; which they accordingly performed, and Committed the said *Gorton* and several of them to Ward: and during the time of their Imprisonment, they carried still very proudly and audaciously towards all in place of Authority, sparing not to reproach, abuse and traduce the most Honourable and Reverend both in Church and State; and which is yet worse, spared not blasphemously to fly upon the Lord Jesus himself, his Word and Ordinances, in such a manner as scarce in any Age any Hereticks or Apostates have done the like: Not onely abandoning and rejecting all Civil Power and Authority, (except moulded according to their own Fancies) but belching out errors in their *Familistical*

*The Answer of
Mr. E. Winflow
to Gortons pam-
phlet, entituled,
Simplicities
defence against
the seven head-
ed policy, wil
give the Reader
a full & parti-
cular intelligence
concerning all
the transactions
of those matters
and likewise of
their damnable
Errors.*

ficall Allegories (if I may so call them) as (to speak with holy reverence) they rendred the Lord Christ no other then an *Imagination*; shunning not blasphemously to say, *That Christ was but a shadow and resemblance of what is done in every Christian*; *That Christ was Incarnate in Adam, and was that Image of God wherein Adam was created*; and, *That his being born afterwards of the Virgin Mary, and suffering, was but a manifestation of his suffering in Adam*; *That Man's losing Gods Image, was the Death of Christ*; *That Christ is the Covenant properly*; and, *That Faith and Christ are all one*: They call the holy Word, and Sermons of Salvation, *Tales*; the Lords-Supper, *An Abomination*, and *A Spell*; Baptism, *Vanity* and *Abomination*; the Ministers of the Word, *Necromancers*: and by other opprobrious terms vilifie and traduce them. Much more might be spoken and mentioned of this stuff, which they have not been ashamed to divulge; but a little is enough: save but to give the Reader to see the Lords goodness towards his poor people in *New-England*, that hath delivered us, and fayed us of his grace from their pernicious destructive wayes, and hath so detected their folly, as it is made manifest to all men. In fine, the said *Gorton* and his fellow-Prisoners were several of them Sentenced to remain in durance in several Towns of the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts* for six Months, and afterwards Banished.

He was a subtle Deceiver, courteous in his carriage to all at some times (for his own ends) but soon moved with passion, and so lost that which he gained upon the simple. To shut up what I have to say concerning him, which is sad; He is since become a fordid man in his life, as he hath been declared to be in his cursed Principles and Opinions, and hath not shunned to say and affirm, That all the felicity we are like to have, we must expect in this life, and no more: and therefore advised one with whom he had some speech, to make much of her self; for she must expect no more but what she could enjoy in this life, or words to the same effect. Thus evil men and deceivers grow worse, and worse, deceiving and being deceived, 2 Tim. 3.13.

1638.

THIS Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governoour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Bradford,

Mr. Edward Winslow,

Captain Miles Standish,

Mr. John Alden,

Mr. John Jenny,

Mr. John Atwood,

Mr. John Brown,

were Chosen Assistants in Go-

vernment,

and were Commaunded to be at the Towne,

This year three men were Executed for Robbing and Murthering an Indian near Providence, which besides the Evidence that came against them, they did in substance Confess against themselves, and were Condemned by Legal Tryal. Some have thought it great severity, to Hang three English for one Indian, but the more Considerate will easily satisfie themselves for the Legality of it: and indeed, should we suffer their Murtherers to go unpunished, we might justly fear that God would suffer them to take a more sharp Revenge. By such Arguments was the Government of Plimouth moved by the Government of the Massachusetts to do Justice in the case. And here may be noted, That the Massachusetts refuled this Tryal, as being committed in the Jurisdiction of Plimouth; and they of Rhode-Island having Apprehended them, delivered them to the aforesaid Jurisdiction of Plimouth on the same grounds.

This Year, about the second of June, there was a great and fearful Earthquake: It was heard before it came with a rumbling Noise, or low murmur, like unto remote Thunder. It came from the Northwards, and passed Southwards: as the Noise approached near, the Earth began to quake, and it came at length with that violence, as caused Platters, Dishes,

in the beginning of this year 1638 the Eastons left and

Newbery and went and builded at Winaconech now called Humber-

Beyond men made and this was the beginning of the year 1639

much but Beings and such like things which stood upon Shelves, to clatter and fall down; yea, people were afraid of their Houses: and it was so, as that some being without doors could not stand, but were fain to catch hold of Posts and Pales to prevent them from falling. About half an hour after, or less, came another Noise and shaking, but not so loud nor strong as the former. It was not onely on the Land, but at Sea also; for some Ships that were on the Sea-coast were shaken by it: so powerful is the mighty hand of the Lord, as to cause both the Earth and Sea to shake, and the Mountains to tremble before him: His way is in the Whirlwind, and the storm and the Clouds are the dust of his feet; the Rocks are thrown down before him: Who can stand before his indignation? and who can abide in the fierceness of his anger?

Nahum 1.

3,4,5,6.

and builded at

Birch mouth at

the Cove and

planted ther this m-

year 1638 - 15.4.

1639.

THIS Year Mr. William Bradford was Chosen Governour of Plimouth;

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. John Alden,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Jenny,

were Chosen Assistants.

this year 1639
we came to
newport

This Year HARVARD COLLEDGE was Erected at Cambridge in New-England, which was so called in Remembrance of a worthy Gentleman, who liberally Contributed towards the Charge of the Erecting of it.

This Year the great Sachem Woosamequen, sometimes called Massasoiet, and Mooanam his Son, came into the Court held at Plimouth in New-England, on the Five and twentieth day

of September, in their own proper persons, and desired that the ancient League and Confederacy formerly made with the Government of *Plimouth* aforesaid, (wherein he acknowledged himself Subject to the King of *England* and his Successors) may stand, and remain inviolable : And the said *Woosamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, for themselves and their Successors, did faithfully promise to keep and observe the Covenants and Conditions therein expressed and contained, which on their parts are likewise to be kept and observed. And the said *Woosamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, did then also promise to the whole Court aforesaid, That he nor they shall nor will needlessly or unjustly raise any quartels, or do any wrong to other Natives, to provoke them to War against him; and, That he nor they shall not Give, Sell or Convey any of his or their Lands, Territories or Possessions whatsoever, to any person or persons whomsoever, without the privity and consent of the Government of *Plimouth* aforesaid, other then to such as the said Government shall send or appoint. All which Conditions the said *Woosamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, for themselves and their Successors, did then faithfully promise to observe and keep. And the whole Court, in the Name of the whole Government, for each Town respectively, did then likewise Ratifie and Confirm the aforesaid ancient League and Confederacy ; and did also further promise to the said *Woosamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, and their Successors, That they shall and will from time to time defend the said *Woosamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, and their Successors, when need and occasion shall require, against all such as shall unjustly rise up against them to wrong or oppress them unjustly.

H: that hers is
called Meda-
nam is the same
that afterwards
was called
Wamsina; it
being usual for
the Indians to
change their
Names.

Of this see
pag. 24.

In the beginning of May this year the Eastons came to Newport in Roode Island and builded there their first English building and there planted this year and coming by boat likely lodg'd at the place called Coasters Harbour the 22 of April 1639 / 1640, and the first of May in the morning gave a post gland the Name of Coasters Harbour and from thence came to Newport the same Day

1640.

MR. William Bradford was Elected Governoour of the Jurisdiction of Plimouth:

This year 3 - 9
the Long Parliament
began.

The King leaves
London 2. II
This year 1640

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. John Brown,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
and
Mr. Edmond Freeman,

were Elected Assistants.

1641.

THIS Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governoour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

This year 2. 8.
March was a fier
9. II
The King leaves Lon-

don
Mr. Edward Winlow,
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown, and
Mr. Edmond Freeman,

were Chosen Assistants
to him in Government.

1642.

1642.

This Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governor 21 m
21.2
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. Edward Winslow,
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. William Thomas, and
Mr. Edmond Freeman,

were Elected Assistants
to him in Government.

The King received
at Hull by Adoram

In reference unto the three years last specified, although I have no special Providence to take notice of, particularly to assign to each of them, save the continuance of Gods mercy and goodness in the Annual Election of godly and able Magistrates in the Jurisdiction of Plimouth, as is before-noted; yet notwithstanding we are to take notice of the continued Peace and Plenty, with which not onely these three years (restrictively considered) but also for many years together both before and after them, New-England was so marvellously gratiated. But that which is more, that about these times the Lord was pleased of his great goodness richly to accomplish and adorn the Colony of Plimouth (as well as other Colonies in New-England) with a considerable number of godly and able Gospel-Preachers, who then being dispersed and disposed of to the several Churches and Congregations thereof, gave Light in a glorious and resplendent manner, as burning and shining Lights: Which mercy and transcendent favour, had not Sin and Satans envy interposed, might have rendred them greatly happy and prosperous; it being observed, That where Gospel-dispensation flourishest, there Prosperity in other respects may usually be expected.

23 m
this year
was Edg^h 1
fifth

In reference unto the honour of God, and due respects unto such worthy Instruments, I thought meet to nominate some of the speciallest of them; viz.

Mr. Charles Chauncy,
Mr. William Hook,
Mr. Nicholas Street,
Mr. John Laythrop,
Mr. John Mayo,
Mr. John Reyser,
Mr. Ralph Partridge,

Mr. Samuel Newman;
Mr. William Leverich,
Mr. Richard Blinman,
Mr. Edward Bulkly,
Mr. John Miller,
Mr. Marmaduke Matthews,

With some others that might be named. These some of them stayed not long ere they removed, some into the Neighbour-Colonies; some into Old-England, and others to their Eternal Rest, whereby the said Jurisdiction was wanting in a great measure for some time of such a Blessing: Howbeit, the Lord hath since graciously raised up a supply to divers of the said Congregations, and more may be expected according to his Promises.

1643.

This Year Mr. William Bradford was elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth: And

Mr. Edward Winflow
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. Edmond Freeman,
And Mr. William Thomas,

} were chosen his Assistants
in Government.

This Year about the eighteenth day of April died Mr. William

liam Brewster, the Ruling Elder of the Church of Christ at Plimouth; concerning whom, I could say much of mine own knowledge; but I shall content my self, only to insert the honourable Testimony that Mr. William Bradford deceased, hath left written with his own hand, concerning him.

Saith he, *My dear Friend Mr. William Brewster was a man that had done and suffered much for the Lord Jesus, and the Gospels sake, and hath born his part in weal and woe, with this poor persecuted Church, above thirty six years, in England, Holland, and in this Wildernes; and done the Lord and them faithful service in his place and calling: and notwithstanding the many troubles and sorrows he passed through, the Lord upheld him to a great age; he was four score and four years of age when he died; he had this blessing added by the Lord to all the rest, to dye in his bed in peace amongst the midst of his friends, who mourned and wept over him, and ministered what help and comfort they could unto him; and he again recompensed them whiles he could: his sickness was not long, and until the last day thereof, he did not wholly keep his bed, his speech continued until somewhat more then half a day before his death, and then failed him, and about nine or ten of the clock that evening he died without any pangs at all; a few hours before, he drew his breath short, and some few minutes before his last, he drew his breath long, as a man fallen into a sound sleep, without any pangs or gasping, and so sweetly departed this life unto a better.*

The death of
Mr. William
Brewster.

I would now demand of any, What he was the worse for former sufferings? What, do I say worse? no, he was the better, and they now added to his honor: It is a manifest token (*saith the Apostle*) ^{2 Thess. 1, 5, 6, 7.} of the righteous Judgement of God, that we may be counted worthy of the Kingdom of God, for which we also suffer; seeing it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you, and to you who are troubled, rest with us when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from Heaven, with his mighty Angels; and if you be reproached (*saith the Apostle 1 Pet. 4. 14.*
Peter) for the Name of Christ, happy are ye, for the Spirit of God and of Glory shall rest upon you: what though he wanted the riches and pleasures of the World in this life, and Poni-

Prov. 10.17.

pious monuments of his Funeral? yet the memorial of the Just shall be blessed, when the name of the wicked shall rot (with their *Marble Monuments*.) He was well educated in learning, as at inferior Schools, so also at the University; and from thence went to the Court, and there served Mr. Davison a godly Gentleman, and Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, and attended him on his Embassage into Holland, and was employed by him in matters of greatest trust; as in keeping of the Keys of the Cautionary Towns delivered up to him for her Majesty, and things of the like nature; his Master would alwayes in private confer with him as a friend or equal: he afterwards lived in good esteem in his own Country, and did much good, until the troubles of those times enforced his remove into Holland, and so into New-England, and was in both places of singular use and benefit to the Church and People of Plimouth whereof he was; being eminently qualified for such work as the Lord had appointed him unto, of which should I speak particularly as I might, I should prove tedious: I shall content my self therefore only to have made honorable mention in general of so worthy a man.

And here I might take occasion to mention with admiration, the marvellous providence of God, that notwithstanding the many changes and hardships that this people, viz. the first Planters at New-Plimouth went through, and the many Enemies they had, and difficulties they met withal, that so many of them should live until very old age: It was not only this Reverend mans condition, but many more of them did the like; some dying before and about this time, and some living, who attained to sixty years of age, and to sixty five, divers to seventy, and some to more then eighty as he did: It must needs be more then ordinary, and above natural reason that so it should be; for it is found in experience, that changing of Air, Famine, and unwholsome Food, much drinking of Water, Sorrows and Troubles &c. all of them are enemies to health; causes of much diseases, consumers of natural vigor, and the bodies of men, and shortners of life; and yet of all these things, they had a large and long part; and suffered deeply in the same:

they

they went from *England* to *Holland*, where they found both worse Air & Dier, then that they came from; from thence, enduring a long imprisonment in the ships at Sea into *New-England*; & how it hath been with them here hath already been shewn, & what crosses, troubles, fears, wants and sorrows they have been liable unto, is easily to be discerned, so as in some sort they may say with the Apostle, *they were in journeys often, in perils of Waters, in perils of Robbers, in perils of their own Nation, in perils amongst the Heathen, in perils in the Wilderness, in perils in the Sea, in perils amongst false Brethren, in weariness, in painfulness, in watching often, in hunger, thirst, in fasting often, in cold and nakedness*: What was it then that upheld them? It was Gods visitation that preserved their spirits; he that upheld the Apostle, upheld them: *They were persecuted but not forsaken, cast down but perished not, as unknown and yet known, as dying and behold we live, as chastened and yet not killed.*

God (it seems) would have all men behold such works of his Providence, as these are towards his people, that they in like cases might be encouraged to depend upon him in their trials, and also bleſs his Name when they see his goodness towards others; *Man lives not by bread only*: It is not by dainty fare, peace, rest and hearts ease, in enjoying contentments and good things of this World only, that preserves health and prolongs life: God (in such examples) would have the World take notice, that he can do it without them; and if the World will shut their eyes and take no notice thereof, yet he would have his people to see and consider it: *Daniel could be in better liking with Pulse, then with the Kings dainties; Jacob, though he went from one Nation to another People, and passed through Famine, Fears and many afflictions, yet he lived until old age, and died sweetly and rested in the Lord, as many others of Gods servants have done, and still do through Gods goodness, notwithstanding all the malice of their enemies; when the branch of the wicked shall be cut off before his day, and the bloody and deceitful man shall not live out half his dayes.*

By reason of the plotting of the Narragansets ever since the

Pequos

Job 15.22.

Psal. 55.23.

Pequot War, the Indians were drawn into a general conspiracy against the English in all parts, as was in part discovered the year before, and now made more plain and evident, by many discoveries and free confessions of sundry Indians, upon several occasions, from divers places, concurring in one; with such other concurring circumstances, as gave the English sufficiently to understand the truth thereof, and to think of means how to prevent the same. In which respect, together with divers other and more weighty reasons, the four Colonies (*viz.*) the Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut and New-Haven, entered into a more near Union and Confederation the nineteenth day of May 1643. and the Articles of the said confederation were signed by the Commissioners of the said Jurisdictions respectively, by which were Authorized thereunto, *viz.*

29th 1643
This year was
Newbury first fight

John Winthrop Governor of the Massachusetts.

Thomas Dudley.

Edward Winslow.

Peter Easton was married

William Collier.

Edward Hopkins.

Peter Coggeshall at New

Thomas Grignon.

Theophilus Eaton.

George Fenwick.

Port

The said Articles at large, with sundry other particulars appertaining thereunto, together with the particulars concerning the plotting, contrivements, menacings and insolencies of the Narragansets against the English, together with the provision and preparation made by the English for an expedition against them, with the yieldings and compliance of the said Narragansets to the English, and the Composition and Articles of agreement made with them, &c. these are all to be seen as they are at large extant in the Records of the Commissioners for the United Colonies of New-England, whereunto I refer the Reader.

See Acts of the
Commissioners
for the united
Colonies of N.E.
A.D. 1644. and
1645.

1644.

THIS Year Mr. Edward Winlow was Elected Governor
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Bradford,
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. William Thomas,
Mr. Edmond Freeman,

were Elected his Assistants in
Government.

This Year Mr. John Atwood died, he was a godly man, singularly endowed with the grace of Patience, and having a large estate became a useful benefactor to the Colonie of New-Plimouth; he departed this life, expressing great Faith in Christ, and a cheerful expectation of the restoration of his body at the general Resurrection in Glory.

This Year many of the Town of Plimouth, by reason of some straits that were upon them, took up thoughts of removing to some other place for their better accommodation, and for that end made a more exact and particular discovery of a place called by the Indians, Namset, which place being purchased by them of the Indians, divers of the considerablest of the Church and Town removed thither, and erected a Town, which is now called by the name of Eastham.

28. 3
D. m.

Nibsey second
light

30. 10
D. m.

Fairfax
vote general

This year the 12 of November yong Nicolous Easton was borne at Newport in 1644

28. 3 This year Boston in
old England was taken by storme

1645

1645.

THIS year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Goverour
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth. And

Mr. Edward Winflow,
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Capt. Myles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown, &
Mr. Edmond Freeman,

Were Elected his Assistants
in Government.

The Commissioners of the United Colonies of New-England were called together this Year, before their ordinary time of meeting, partly in regard of some differences between the French, and the Government of the Massachusetts, about their aiding of Monsieur Latorre against Monsieur de Aulney; and partly about the Indians, who had broken their former agreements about the peace concluded the year before; as concerning such conclusions and determinations which passed in this meeting, in reference to the premises, I shall refer the Reader unto the Acts of the said Commissioners for that Year, as they are recorded at large.

This meeting
was held the 28
of July, 1645.

In
30. 10. 1644

This year was
Sir Thomas
Fairfax voted

General of
the Parliament
army

This year Peter Easton Came to live at the end of
the Beach on the East End therof

1646.

1 6 4 6.

This Year Mr. William Bradford was Chosen Governour
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. Edward Winflow,
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
And
Mr. Edmond Freeman,

were Elected his Assistants
in Government.

About the middle of May this Year, there came three Men
of War into Plimouth Harbour, under the command of Captain
Thomas Cromwel, who had taken several Prizes from the
Spaniards, by Commission from the Earl of VVarwick: they
were full of monies, silks, and other rich goods, some of which
they left behinde them. They were a company of lusty stout
men, but very unruly and hard to govern; notwithstanding
the care and vigilance, both of such as were in Authority of
Plimouth, and also of their own Commanders, who could hard-
ly restrain them, especially from inordinate drinking and quar-
relling: It proved fatal to one of them, who being quarrelling
with one of their own company, and being commanded by
their Captain to forbear, he giving very provoking Language,
and also attempting to draw upon his Captain; he took his
Rapier from him, and struck him on the head, with the Hilt, of
which wound, three or four dayes after he died: the Captain was
tried by a Council of War, and acquitted by the largeness of
his Commission.

This Year Mr. Edward VVinflow went for England, upon
occasion that some discontented persons, under the Govern-
ment of the Massachusets, sought to trouble their peace, and
disturb

disturb, if not innovate their Government, by laying many scandals upon them, and intended to prosecute against them in *England*, by Petitioning and Complaining to the *Parliament*. Also *Samuel Gorton* and his company, made complaint against them; so as they made choice of Mr. *WVinflow* to be their Agent to make their defence, and gave him Commission and Instructions for that end: in which he so carried himself, as did well answer their ends, and cleared them from any blame and dishonour, to the shame of their Adversaries. After this he fell upon other imployments in *England*, which detained him there, so as he returned not again to *New-England* any more, whose absence hath been much to the weakening of the Government of *New-Plimouth*, who had large experience of his help and usefulness amongst them in Government, &c. of whom I have more to insert in honour of so worthy a Gentleman in its more proper place.

This year 8
was sick
the French
doctor

1647.

MR. *William Bradford* was Elected Governoour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Edward Winflow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *John Brown*, And
Mr. *William Thomas*.

were Elected his Assi-
stants in Government.

Thi,

This Year the whole Land, but more especially the Church and Town of *Hartford* on *Conecticot*, sustainted a great and more then ordinary Loss, by the Death of that most eminent Servant of Jesus Christ Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, who in the Month of *July* in this year changed this Life for a better: Concerning whose Piety, Learning, and singular dexterity in Preaching the Gospel with answerable success, the many Souls wrought upon by his Ministry in both *Old-England* and *New*, do give forth a large Testimony; and withall, as an addition to the former, those Learned and Profitable Works penned by him for the Refutation of Errour, and guiding and confirming of the Saints in the Wayes of Christ: In which respects, with others, his Name will live, and is Embalmed; and doth remain, and will be as a precious Oyntment in the Churches, and amongst the Saints, in present and future Ages.

*The Death of
Mr. Hooker.*

This special Servant of Christ, as he served his Master with great Zeal, Love, Wisdome, and Sincerity; so he ended his Life with much Comfort and Serenity: so as it is rare that was said of him, That the peace which he had in believing thirty years before his death, was firm and not touched by the Adversary untill the period of his life: And with much joy and peace in believing he fell asleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at *Hartford* on *Conecticot*.

In whose Memorial, I shall here insert the Funeral Elegies of two eminent Divines, written upon his Death.

*On my Reverend and dear Brother, Mr. Thomas Hooker,
Late Pastor of the Church at Hartford on Conecticot.*

*To see three things was holy Austins wish,
Rome in her Flower, Christ Jesus in the Flesh,
And Paul i'th Pulpit: Lately men might see,
Two first, and more, in Hookers Ministry.*

*Zion in Beauty, is a fairer sight,
Then Rome in Flower, with all her glory dight:*

Yet Zions Beauty did most clearly shine
In Hookers Rule, and Doctrine: both Divine.

Christ in the Spirit, is more then Christ in Flesh,
Our Souls to quicken, and our States to blesse?
Yet Christ in Spirit brake forth mightily,
In faithful Hookers searching Ministry.

Paul in the Pulpit, Hooker could not reach;
Yet did He Christ in Spirit so lively preach,
That living Hearers thought He did inherit
A double Portion of Pauls lively spirit.

Prudent in Rule, in Argument quick, full:
Fervent in Prayer, in Preaching powerfull:
That well did learned Ames record bear,
The like to Him he never wot to hear.

Twas of Geneva's Worthies said, with wonder,
(Those Worthies Three:) Farell was wont to Thunder,
Viret, like Rain, on tender grass to shower,
But Calvin, lively Oracles to pour.

All these in Hookers spirit did remain:
A Son of Thunder, and a Shower of Rain,
A pourer forth of Lively Oracles,
In saving Souls, the sum of Miracles.

Now blessed Hooker, thou art set on high,
Above the thankless world, and cloudy skee:
Do thou of all thy labour reap the Crown,
Whilst we here reap the seed which thou hast sown.

J. C.

A Lamentation for the Death of that Precious and Worthy Minister of Jefus Christ, Mr. Thomas Hooker, who died July 7.
1647. as the Sun was Setting: the same hour of the day
died blessed Calvin, that glorious Light:-

Come sighs, come sorrows, let's lament this Rod,
Which hath bereav'd us of this Man of God:
A Man of God, which came from God to men,
And now from them is gone to God agen.
Bid Joy depart, bid Merriment be gone;
Bid Friends stand by, sit sorrowful alone.
But ah! what sorrow can be to suffice,
Though Heaven and Earth were filled with our cries,
The Clouds were turned into drops of tears,
The Mourning for to last an Age of Years?
'T were all too little to lament his death,
Whose life so precious was for Heaven and Earth.
Job mis'd his day might quite forgotten me,
Which brought him forth this worlds light first to see;
O let not the day numbred be i'th Year,
That took this Light out of our Hemisphere.
A fatal day, a day of sad presage
To us survivors of this present Age:
The hour of thy decease when Sun went down,
When light turn'd dark, when heavens began to frown.
'T is ominous to us who saw his light,
That Grace provok'd should turn our day to night;
And Gospels light which shineth from on high,
Should clouded be, and darkned in our skie.
O happy dayes, when such Lights shone on Earth!
O bitter dayes, when they are hid beneath!
This is our grief, He which late shin'd on high
Is hid in grave, and now beneath doth lie.
Let Hartford sigh, and say, I've lost a Treasure;
Let all New-England mourn at Gods Disposseure,

In taking from us one more gracious,
 Then is the Gold of Ophir precious.
 Sweet was the favour which his grace did give,
 It seafon'd all the place where he did live:
 His Name did as an Ointment give it's smell,
 And all bare witness that it favour'd well.
 Wisdome, Love, Meeknes, Friendly Courtesie,
 Each Moral Virtue, with rare Pietie,
 Pure Zeal, yet mixt with mildest Clemency,
 Did all confire in this one Breast to lye.
 Deep was his Knowledge, Judgement was acute;
 His Doctrine solid, which none could confute.
 To Minde he gave light of intelligence,
 And search'd the corners of the Conscience:
 To Sinners stout, which no Law could bring under,
 To them he was a Son of dreadful Thunder,
 When all strong Oaks of Bashan us'd to quake,
 And fear did Lebanon his Cedars shake;
 The stoutest Hearts he filled full of fears,
 He glaze the Rocks, they melted into tears.
 Yet to sad Souls, with sense of Sin cast down,
 He was a Son of Consolation.
 Sweet peace he gave to such as were contrite;
 Their darkness sad he turn'd to joyous light.
 Of Preaching he had learn'd the rightest Art,
 To every one dividing his own part.
 Each Ear that heard him said, He spake to me:
 So piercing was his holy Ministrie.
 His Life did shine, Times Changes stain'd it not,
 Envy it self, could not there finde a spot.
 Had he surgiv'd to finish Works begun,
 'T had been a Blessing to all Christendome:
 Then should the world have known what God had shew'd him,
 And what themselves for all his Works had ow'd him.
 But this unthankfull Age is now cut short
 Of that rich Treasure, 'cause they car'd not for't.

O that

O that his love may turn us, yet to prize
The blessings yet enjoy'd: herein be wise;
Lest that which he not long ago foretold,
Be now in us fulfil'd, as 'twas of old,
That Wantonness of Churches, would bereave
Them of their Ministers, without their leave.
God plaguing this his messengers contempt,
With this soul-destroying Plague and Punishment:
But whatsoever wrath doth us abide,
Whatever plague for sin doth us bide,
Yet thou, O blessed Saint, art now at rest,
I'th bosom of thy Christ which is the best:
Bathing in rivers of divine pleasure,
Which is at Gods right hand, most sweet and pure,
Tasting the fruit of all thy labours spent,
To honour God which was thy whole intent.
From God thou camest forth, who sent thee hither
And now hath call'd thee back to live together;
Him didst thou serve, while life and breath did last,
With him now blest, while life and breath is past.
Sense of our los's would call thee back again,
But out of love, we bid thee there remain,
Till we yet left behinde our course fulfil'd,
To meet thee on the top of Zion hill;
When thou and we shall both rejoice together,
So fast united as no death shall sever;
Both to sing praises to our heavenly King,
Who hath us saved from death's poisonous sting,
And will restore our bodies from the grave,
Which them to dust of death consumed have;
Making them shone, like brightness of the Sun
With Glory, ne'r to end when once begun.
Let Heaven, and Earth, Angels, and Men him praise,
Sonnding his Glory past all length of dayes;

2 m
30. II
King Charles
the first beheaded
this year the
later end of Jan

1648.

THIS Year Mr. William Bradford was elected Governor
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth: And

This year the Pres-
tices ~~Rise against~~
the army. 8.3 }
Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. William Thomas, }
were chosen his Assistants
in Government.

1649.

THIS Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governor
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth.

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Captain Miles Standish
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown, }
And
Mr. William Thomas, }
were Chosen his Assis-
tants in Government.

This Year Mr. John Winthrop Governor of the Jurisdiction
of the Massachusetts deceased, the twenty sixth day of March,
about ten of the clock. He was singular for Piety, Wisdom,
and of a publick spirit; he brought over a great estate into the
Country, and partly by his liberality, & partly by the unfaithfulness
of his Baily, spent the most part of it; so as when he died, he
was

The death of
Mr. Winthrop.

was but low in that respect : and yet notwithstanding, very much honoured and beloved of the most, and continued in the place of Governour for the most part until his death, which was much lamented by many. He was a man of unbyassed Justice, patient in respect of personal wrongs and injuries, a great lover of the Saints, especially able Ministers of the gospel ; very sober in desiring, and temperate in improving earthly contentments ; very humble, courteous, and studious of general good. His body was with great solemnity and honour, buried at Boston in New-England, the third of April, 1649.

This year some parts of the Country was much troubled with numerable hosts of Caterpillers, which destroyed the fruits of the earth in divers places ; and did eat off the leaves of the trees, so as they looked as bare as if it had been winter : and in some places did eat the leaves from off the Pease straw, and did not eat the Pease. It pleased God to give them a check, and a rebuke, so as they hurt but in some places, and of his goodness in short time removed them.

This Year August 25. that faithful and eminent servant of Christ Mr. Thomas Shepard died, who was a soul-searching Minister of the Gospel, and Pastor of the Church of Christ at Cambridge. By his death not only that Church and people, but also all New-England sustained a very great loss : he not only preached the Gospel profitably and very successively, but also hath left behinde him divers worthy works of special use, in reference unto the clearing up the state of the soul to God-ward, the benefit thereof, those can best experience, who are most conversant in the improving of them, and have Gods blessing on them therein to their souls good. His body was honourably buried at Cambridge in New-England.

Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord, for their Works follow them, Rev. 13. 13.

This Year there passed an Act of Parliament in England, for the promoting and propagating the Gospel of Jesus Christ amongst the Indians in New-England ; in reference unto the furtherance and advancement of so good a work, a Corpora-

*An innumerable
company of cat-
terpillers in
some parts of
the Country.*

*This year the
Portugall em-
bassadors arive
in England*

24. 4

*Dublin in
Ireland be-
seigd this year*

tion of sixteen Select men were appointed, consisting of a President, Treasurer, and Assistants, called by the name of the President and Society for the propagation of the Gospel in *New-England*, to receive such sums of money, as from time to time was, or should be collected and raised by the liberal contributions of such as whose hearts God was pleased to stir up to so glorious a work; and it was by the same Parliament Enacted, that the Commissioners for the United Colonies of *New-England*; for the time being, by themselves or such as they shall appoint, shall have Power and Authority to receive and dispose of the said monies brought in & paid to the said Treasurer for the time being, or any other Monies, Goods or Commodities acquired and delivered by the care of the said Corporation at any time: whose receipt or receipts of such Person or Persons so Authorized by them, shall be a sufficient discharge to the said Corporation and Treasurer. The particulars of such Orders and Instructions, with which the said Act is invested, the Reader may be more amply satisfied in, by the perusal thereof, as it is extant bearing date, July 27. 1649.

Moreover, let the Reader take notice of the special favour of Almighty God, in moving the heart of the *Kings Majesty*, since his Restitution to his Crown and Regal Dignity, particularly of his Royal Favour to countenance this work, ~~and to secure~~ what hath been, and what may be given toward this work by a legal settlement, which before was wanting; so as the said glorious design hath been vigorously carried on, both in *Old England* and in *New*, by such active and faithful Instruments as God hath raised up and improved therin, with some considerable success. The work coming on to such perfection, as that the Holy Bible is Translated and Printed in the *Indian Language*, whereby the glad tidings of the Gospel is, and may be communicated to them with the greater facility: some souls also of them being gained (as may be hoped) to believe on the Lord Jesus for life everlasting; and daily hopes of further and greater success in that behalf, for which unspeakable riches of his grace, let his Holy Name have all the praise throughout all ages.

The

The Principal Instruments improved in Preaching
the Gospel of Christ unto the Indians, are

Mr. John Eliot Senior.

Mr. John Eliot Junior.

Mr. Thomas Mayhew.

Mr. Pierson.

Mr. Brown.

Mr. James.

Mr. Cotton.

Besides divers of their own Nation, whose Names and
number I know not.

1650.

This Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governour
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

m
3.7

Dunbar fight
this yearre

Mr. Edward Winslow,

Mr. Thomas Prince,

Mr. William Collier,

Captain Miles Standish,

Mr. Timothy Hathorly,

Mr. John Brown, and

Mr. William Thomas,

} Chosen Assistants to him
in Government.

This Year there was more then ordinary mortality in the
Country, especially about Boston, and mostly amongst their
Children: since which time, several diseases have been in the
Country more frequently then formerly; as namely, gripings
in the bowels, with violent Vomiting and Purgings, which hath
taken away many: as also a disease in the Mouth or Throat,

New diseases
the fruits of
new seas.

which hath proved mortal to some in a very short time; as also great distempers of Colds, &c. which ought to be awakening dispensations, together with others, to cause us to consider and examine, whether we have not provoked the Lord with some general and unwonted sins; insasmuch as he is pleased to exercise the Country oft-times with unwonted afflictions and punishments.

1651.

THIS Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governor of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

2 m
18. 2

general slate
set sail for scile

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Mr. William Collier,
Captain Miles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. John Alden,
Captain Thomas Willet,

} were Chosen his Assistants
in Government.

Mr. William
Thomas his
death.

This Year Mr. William Thomas expired his natural life, in much peace and comfort: he served in the place of Magistracy in the Jurisdiction of Plimouth divers Years; he was a well approved and a well grounded Christian; well read in the Holy Scriptures, and other approved Authors, and a good lover and approver of Godly Ministers and good Christians, and one that had a sincere desire to promote the common good both of Church and State. He died of a Consumption, and was honourably buried at Marshfield, in the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth.

1652.

1652,

THIS year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governoour
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth. And

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Capt. Myles Standish,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. John Alden,
Captain Thomas Willet, &
Lieut. Thomas Southworth

Were Chosen his Assistants
in Government.

This Year that blessed Servant of God, Mr. John Cotton died; he was sometimes Preacher of Gods Word at Boston in Lincolnshire, and from thence came over into New-England, in the Year 1633, and was chosen Teacher of the first Church of Christ at Boston: for which Function and Office, he was greatly enriched with gifts & abilities, being an able expounder, and faithful applier of the Word of God; furnished also with wisdom and prudence to go before the Church, in the ordering of the affairs thereof; endowed also with meekness of spirit, whereby he was fitted to compose such differences as did at any time arise amongst them: he was very patient also in respect unto personal wrongs or injuries done unto himself, yea, towards his sharpest Antagonists. An influence of good, not only flowed from him unto the Church over whom he was set, but also into all the Churches in New-England (as necessity required.) About the time of his sickness, there appeared in the Heavens, over New-England, a Comet, giving a dim light; and so waxed dimmer and dimmer, until it became quite extinct and went out, which time of its being extinct, was soon after the time of the period of his life: it being a very signal testimony, that God had then removed a bright Star, a burning and shining light out

of Mr. Cottons Life, Mr. Norton hath Penned a Book whereunto I refer the Reader for more full relation of the same.

A Comet seen
at the time of
Mr. Cottons
sickness, and
went out soon
after his death.

of the heaven of his Church here, unto Celestial glory above. He was buried at Boston in New-England, with great Honour and Lamentation, in the Year above written.

Upon whose never enough deplored death, were made these Verses following.

A Funeral Elegie upon the death of the truely Reverend Mr. John Cotton, late Teacher of the Church of Christ at Boston in New-England.

And after Winthrop's, Hooker's, Shepard's Herse,
Doth Cotton's death call for a mourning Verse?

Thy Will be done: yet Lord who dealest thus,
Make this great death expedient for us.

Luther pull'd down the Pope, Calvin the Prelate slew:
Of Calvin's Lapse, chief cure to Cotton's due.

Cotton whose Learning, Temper, Godliness,
The German Phoenix lively did express.

Melanthon's all, may Luthers word but pass;
Melanthon's all, in our great Cotton was.

Then him in flesh, scarce dwelt a better one:
So great's our loss, when such a Spirit's gone.

Whil'st He was here, Life was more Life to me;
Now He is not, Death hence less Death shall be.

That Comets, great Mens deaths do oft forego,
This present Comet doth too sadly shew.

This Prophet dead, yet must in's Doctrine speak
This Comet saith, else must New-England break.

What ere it be, the Heavens avert it far,
That Meteors should succeed our greatest Star.

In Bostons Orb, Winthrop and Cotton were;
These Lights extinct, dark is our Hemisphere.

In Boston once how much shin'd of our glory,
We now lament, Posterity will story.

Let Boston live, who had, and saw their worth :
 And did them Honour, both in life and death,
 To him New-England trust in this distress,
 Who will not leave his exiles comfortless.

7. N.

Upon the T O M B of the most Reverend Mr. John Cotton,
 late Teacher of the Church of Boston in New-England.

H ere lies magnanimous Humility,
 Majesty, Meekness ; Christian Apathy
 On soft Affections : Liberty in thrall ;
 A Noble Spirit, Servant unto all.
 Learnings great Master-piece ; who yet would sit
 As a Disciple at his Schollars feet.
 A simple Serpent, or Serpentine Dove,
 Made up of wisdom, Innocence, and Love.
 Neatness Embroider'd with it self alone ;
 And Civil Canonized in a Gown :
 Embracing old and young, and low and high ;
 Ethics imbodyed in Divinity :
 Ambitious to be lowest, and to raise
 His Brethrens Honour on his own Decays.
 Thus doth the Sun retire into his bed,
 That being gone, the Stars may shew their head.
 Could wound at Argument without Division ;
 Cut to the quick, and yet make no Incision ;
 Ready to Sacrifice Domestick Notions
 To Churches Peace, and Ministers Devotions.
 Himself indeed (and singular in that)
 Whom all admired, he admired not.
 Liv'd like an Angel of a Mortal Birth,
 Conver'd in Heaven while he was on Earth :
 Though not (as Moses) radiant with Light,
 Whose Glory dazell'd the beholders sight ;

T

Yet

Yet so divinely beautif'd, you'd count
 He had been born and bred upon the Mount.
*A living breathing Bible : Tables where
 Both Covenants at large engraven were ;
 Gospel and Law in's Heart had each its Column
 His Head an Index to the Sacred Volume.
 His very Name a Title Page ; and next,
 His Life a Commentary on the Text.*
*O what a Monument of glorious Worth,
 When in a New Edition he comes forth
 without Errata's, may we think he'll be,
 In Leaves and Covers of Eternitie !*
*A man of Might at heavenly Eloquence,
 To fix the Ear, and charm the Conscience ;
 As if Apollos were reviv'd in him,
 Or he had learned of a Seraphim.*
*Spake many Tongues in one : one Voice and Sense
 Wrought Joy and Sorrow, Fear and Confidence.
 Rocks rent before him, Blinde receiv'd their sight ;
 Souls levell'd to the dunghil, stood upright.
 Infernal Furies burst with rage to see
 Their Pris'ners captiv'd into Libertie.
 A Star that in our Eastern England rose,
 Thence hurry'd by the Blast of stupid foes,
 Whose foggy Darkness, and benummed Senses,
 Brook'd not his daz'ling fervent Influences.
 Thus did he move on Earth from East to West ;
 There he went down, and up to Heaven for Rest,
 Nor from himself, whilst living doth he vary,
 His Death hath made him an Ubiquitary :
*Where is his Sepulchre ? is hard to tell,
 Who in a thousand Sepulchres doth dwell ;
 (Their Hearts, I mean, whom he hath left behind,) In them his Sacred Relique's now Enshrin'd.
 But let his Mourning Flock be comforted,
 Though Moses be, yet Joshua is not dead.**

I mean

I mean Renowned NORTON; worthy bee
Successor to our MOSES is to bee,
O happy Israel in AMERICA,
In such a MOSES such a JOSHUA.

B. W.

1653.

M^R. William Bradford was Elected Gouvernour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. Thomas Prince,	}	were Chosen his Assi-
Captain Miles Standish,		stants in Government.
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,		
Mr. John Brown,		
Mr. John Alden,		
Captain Thomas Willet, &c		

Lieut. Thomas Southworth,

Mr. Thomas Dudley, who was a principal Founder and Pillar of the Colony of the *Massachusetts* in *New-England*, and sundry times Gouvernour and Deputy Gouvernour of that Jurisdiction, died at his house in *Roxbury*, July 31. in the seventy seventh Year of his age: he was a person of quick understanding, and solid Judgement in the fear of the Lord, he was a lover of (1) Justice, (2) Order, (3) the People, (4) Christian Religion; the supremest virtues of a good Magistrate. 1. His love to Justice appeared at all times, and in special upon the Judgement seat, without respect of persons in Judgement: and in his own particular transactions, with all men he was exact and exemplary. 2. His zeal to Order appeared in contriving good Laws, and faithfully executing them upon criminal offenders, Hereticks, and Underminers of true Religion. He had a piercing Judgement to discover the Wolf, though cloathed

20. 10
This month
the Lord god
father was
exclaimed

with a sheep-skin. 3. His love to the People was evident in serving them in a publick capacity many Years, at his own cost, and that as a nursing Father to the Churches of Christ. 4. He loved the true Christian Religion, and the pure Worship of God, and cherished as in his bosom, all godly Ministers and Christians: he was exact in the practice of Piety, in his person and family all his life; in a word, he lived desired, and died lamented by all good men.

The Verses following were found in his Pocket after his death, which may further illustrate his Character, and give a taste of his poetical fancy: wherein (it is said) he did excel.

Dim Eyes, deaf Ears, cold Stomack, here
My dissolution is in view.
Eleven times seven near liv'd have I;
And now God calls, I willing die:
My Shuttle's shot, my race is run;
My Sun is set, my Deed is done;
My Span is measur'd, Tale is told;
My Flower is faded and grown old;
My Dream is vanish'd, Shadow's fled,
My Soul with Christ, my Body dead.
Farewel dear Wife, Children, and Friends,
Hate Heresie, make blessed ends;
Bear Poverty, live with good men,
So shall we meet with joy agen.

Let men of God in Courts and Churches watch
O're such as do a Toleration-hatch;
Lest that ill Egg bring forth a Cockatrice,
To poison all with Heresie and Vice.
If men be left and otherwise combine,
My Epitaph's, I dy'd no Libertine.

This Year Mr. John Laythrop did put off his Earthly Tabernacle: He was sometimes Preacher of Gods Word in Egerton

in Kent, from whence he went to London, and was chosen Pastor of a Church of Christ there; he was greatly troubled & imprisoned for witnessing against the errors of the times: during the time of his imprisonment, his wife fell sick, of which sickness she died. He procured liberty of the Bishop to visit his Wife, before her death, and commended her to God by Prayer, who soon after gave up the ghost: at his return to Prison, his poor Children being many, repaired to the Bishop to Lambeth, and made known unto him their miserable condition, by reason of their good Father his being continued in close durance; who commiserated their condition so far, as to grant him his liberty, who soon after came over into New-England, and settled for some time at the Town of Scituate, and was chosen Pastour of their Church, and faithfully dispensed the Word of God amongst them: and afterwards the said Church dividing, a part whereof removing to Barnstable, he removed with them, and there remained until his death. He was a man of an humble and broken heart and spirit, lively in dispensation of the Word of God; studious of peace, furnished with godly contentment; willing to spend and to be spent for the Cause and Church of Christ. He fell asleep in the Lord, Nov. 8. 1653.

1654.

This Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governor
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Captain Miles Standish, }
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly, } were Chosen Assistants to him
Mr. John Brown, } in Government.
Mr. John Alden, and
Capt. Thomas Willer,

*This year for the first time
began in the north of
England*

T 3

1655.

1655.

THIS Year Mr. William Bradford was Elected Governor
of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

10.3

*This year the
English fleet
take Gameco*

Mr. Thomas Prince,
Captain Miles Standish
Mr. William Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Brown,
Mr. John Alden, and
Captain Thomas Willer,

} were Chosen Assistants
to him in Government.

*The death of
Mr. Winslow.*

This year that Worthy and Honourable Gentleman Mr. Edward Winslow deceased; of whom I have had occasion to make honourable mention formerly in this Discourse. He was the Son of Edward Winslow Esq; of the Town of Draughtwich in the County of Worcester: He travelling into the Low-Countrys, in his Journeys fell into acquaintance with the Church of Leyden in Holland, unto whom he joyned, and with whom he continued until they parted to come into New-England, he coming with that part that came first over, and became a very worthy and useful Instrument amongst them, both in the place of Government and otherwise, until his last Voyage for England, being sent on special Employment for the Government of the Massachusetts, as is foremention'd in this Book; and afterwards was employed as one of the grand Commissioners in that unhappy Design against Domingo in Hispaniola, who taking grief for the ill success of that Enterprize; on which, together with some other Infirmitie's that were upon him, he fell sick at Sea betwixt Domingo and Jamaica, and died the eighth day of May, which was about the Sixty first year of his life, and his Body was honourably committed to the Sea, with the usual Solemnity of the Discharge of Fourty two Piece of Ordnance.

One

One of the Company who was employed in taking notice of the Particulars of that Tragedy, gave such Testimony of the said Mr. *VVinflow*, as followeth in this Poem:

*The Eighth of May, west from *Spaniola Shore,
God took from us our Grand Commissioner,
Winflow by Name, a man in Chiefest Trust,
VVhose Life was sweet, and Conversation just;
VVhose Parts and wi(dome) most men did excell:
An honour to his Place, as all can tell.*

1656.

This Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Chosen Governour
of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Capt. *Thomas Willet*, &
Capt. *James Cudworth*,

} were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.

27. 10

This yeare
James NaylorBored therow
the tongue and
stigmatized

This Year Captain *Miles Standish* expired his mortal life: He was a Gentleman, born in *Lancashire*, and was Heir-Apparent unto a great Estate of Lands and Livings, surreptitiously detained from him; his great Grandfather being a Second or Younger Brother from the House of *Standish*. In his younger time he went over into the *Low-Countrys*, and was a Souldier there, and came acquainted with the Church of *Leyden*, and came over into *New-England* with such of them as at the first set out for the Planting of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, and bare a deep share of their first Difficulties, and was alwayes

The death of
Capt. Standish

always very faithful to their Interest: He growing ancient, became sick of the Stone or Strangulation; whereof, after his suffering of much dolorous pain, he fell asleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at Duxbury.

1657.

This year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governoour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth.

*This Election
was on the fifth
of June 1657.
& M William
Bradford died
the 9th of May
in this year be-
fore this Elec-
tion.*

Mr. VVilliam Collier,
Mr. Timothy Hatherly,
Mr. John Alden,
Captain Thomas VVillet,
Capt. James Cudworth,
Capt. Josias VVinslow, &
Lieut. Tho: Southworth,

Were Chosen his Assistants
in Government.

*This year
friends came
over first to
Plimouth John
Rox. Christophe
Roxbor. Robert
Fowles. Robert
Hovytton.*

This Year it pleased God to put a period to the life of his precious Servant Mr. VVilliam Bradford, who was the second Governoour of the Jurisdiction of Plimouth, and continued in the same place for the most part of his time, with little intermission. Concerning whom, the following Poems made, the one by himself, and the other by such as were well acquainted with his Worth and Excellency, will give a large Testimony thereof.

Certain Verses left by the Honour'd VVilliam Bradford Esq; Governoour of the Jurisdiction of Plimouth, penned by his own hand, declaring the gracious dispensation of Gods Providence towards him in the time of his Life, and his preparation and fittedness for Death.

From my years young in daies of Youth,
God did make knowne to me his Truth,

And

And call'd me from my Native place
For to enjoy the Means of Grace.
In Wildernes he did me guide,
And in strange Lands for me provide.
In Fears and Wants, throughe Weal and Woe,
As Pilgrim past I to and fro:
Oft left of them whom I did trust;
How vain it is to rest on Dust!
A man of Sorrows I have been,
And many Changes I have seen.
Wars, Wants, Peace, Plenty have I known;
And some advanc'd, others thrown down.
The humble, poor, cheerful and glad;
Rich, discontent, fower and sad:
VWhen Tears with Sorrows have been mixt,
Consolations came betwixt:
Faint not, poor Soul, in God still trust,
Fear not the things thou suffer must;
For, whom he loves he doth chaffise,
And then all Tears wipes from their eyes.
Farewell, dear Children, whom I love,
Your better Father is above:
VWhen I am gone, he can supply;
To him I leave you, when I dye.
Fear him in Truth, walk in his Wayes,
And he will bless you all your dayes.
My dayes are spent, Old Age is come,
My Strength it fails, my Glass near run:
Now, I will wait when work is done,
Untill my happy Change shall come,
VWhen from my labours I shall rest
With Christ above for to be blest.

By

By the honoured, Major *Jofias Winslow*, on the the said Mr.
william Bradford, as followeth:

WILLIAM BRADFORD. Anagr.

I made Law for Bridl'.
For Law I made Bridl'.

See how God honoured hath this Worthy's Name,
To make it spelt his Virtue, and proclaim
His rare Endowments, us'd for God and Us:
Now such as honour God, he'll honour thus.

Both Just, and Gentle; Merciful, and Just;
And yet a Man, and yet compos'd of Dust?
Yes, God within these slender walls can finde
A Noble, Virtuous, Studious, Active Minde.

God was the Guider of his Childhood, Youth;
God did preserve him ever in the Truth,
And gave him grace to own Him when but yong,
Whom afterward he made a Champion strong

For to defend his People, and his Cause;
By Wisdome, Justice, Prudence, and by Laws;
And most of all by his own good Example,
A Patern fit to imitate most ample.

If we should trace him from the first, we finde
He flies his Country, leaves his Friends behinde,
To follow God, and to professe his Wayes,
And here encounters Hardships many dayes.

He is content (with Moses) if God please,
(Renouncing Honour, Profit, Pleasure, Ease)
To suffer Tossings and Unsettlements,
And (if their Rage doth rise) to Banishments.

He weighs it not, so he may still preserve
His Conscience clear, and with Gods People serve
Him freely, according to his minde and will;
If not in one place, hee'll go forward still.

If God have Work for him i'th' Ends of th' Earth,
Safe, Danger, Hunger, Colds, nor any Dearth,
A howling Wildernes, nor Salvage men,
Discourage him, hee'll follow God aghen.

And how God hath made him an Instrument
To us of quiet Peace and Settlement,
I need not speak; the eldest, youngest know
God honour'd him with greater Work then so.

To sum up all, in this still he went hence,
This man was wholly God's: His Recompence
Remains beyond expression, and he is
Gone to possess it in Eternall Bliss.

Hee's happy, happy thrice, unhappy we
That still remain more Changes here to see:
Let's not lament that God hath taken him
From Troubles hence, in Seas of Joyes to swim.

Let's not lament his gracious Life is ended,
And he to Life of Glory is attended;
Nor let us grieve that now Gods Work is done,
In making him a happy blessed one.

But let's bewail that we have so neglected
Duty to God, or men have disrespected
With earnest Lamentations let's lament,
And whiles we may let's seriously Repent,

*That we have not improved as we might,
For God, and for our selves, this Worthy Wight;
And now that God hath Moses ta'ne away,
Let's pray that he would give us Joshua*

*To go before the Camp, and to subdue
God's and his People's foes; whatever Crew
Oppose our Journeys to that Land of Rest,
Which till obtain'd, we're never truely blest.*

*And for our better progres in this course,
Let now our great Necessity enforce
Each man to study Peace, and to improve
His greatest strength to re-unite in Love
The Hearts and the Affections of us all,
Left by our fault Gods Work to th'ground shoud fall.*

W hy mourns the People thus for me, since I
I n Heavens dwell shall to Eternity?
L et not so many Tears fall from my Friends;
L ive holy, happy, God will recompense
I nto your bosomes all your love agen,
A nd your affections whiles I did remain
M ongst you, but now you must refrain.

B ear up your hearts, dear hearts, when thoughts of me
R un in your mindes, with this, The time will be,
A nd every bower brings it on apace,
ear friends, when we for ever shall imbrace.
F arewell but for a season then, farewell;
O ur next Embraces shall the rest excell.
R est happy, Children, Friends, and Tender Wife,
D each but begins the godly's happy Life.

A few Verses more added by one that was well acquainted
with the Worth of the said Mr. William Bradford.

THe Ninth of May, about Nine of the Clock,
A precious one God out of Plimouth took :
Governour Bradford then expir'd his breath,
Was call'd away by force of cruel Death.
A man approv'd in Town, in Church, in Court,
Who so behav'd himself in godly sort
For the full space of Thirty seven years,
As he was means of turning many fears
Away from thee, poor Plimouth, where he spent
The better part of time that God him lent.
Well skill'd he was in Regulating Laws,
So as by Law he could defend the Cause
Of poor distressed Plaintiff, when he brought
His Case before him, and for help besought.
Above all other men, he loved those
Who Gospel-truths most faithfully unclos'd,
Who were with Grace and Learning fully fraught,
Such as laboriously the Gospell taught :
Willing also to own in his due place
The meanest Saint, expressing gifts of grace.
Sweet Brewster he is gone some time before,
Wife Winslow whose death we lament so sore,
And faithful Standish freed from horrid pain,
To be with Christ, in truth the greatest gain :
Now blessed holy Bradford, a Successor
Of blessed holy Bradford the Confessor,
Is gone to place of Rest, with many more
Of precious ones, whom I might name great store,
And Commendation of each one have given ;
But what needs that ? their Names are writ in Heaven.
And now, dear Lord, let us our time improve,
To be with thee in Prayer much above.

Oh save thy People, help in time of need ;
When all means fails, be thou in room and stead
Of other helps, who fail when needed most ;
When greatest need, they then give up the ghost.
And let thy Servants their time still employ,
That in the end they may attain such joy
As may a fruit of true Believing bee,
That we with Christ may reign Eternallie.

This Worthy Gentleman was interred with the greatest solemnities that the Jurisdiction to which he belonged was in a capacity to perform : many deep sighs, as well as loud volleys of shot, declaring that the People were no less sensible of their own losse, who were surviving, then mindful of the worth and honour of him that was deceased ; you might now easily discern a heavy heart in the mournful countenance of every sober minded and considerate man : for as you have heard in the three or four Years last past, God was pleased greatly to weaken this poor tottering Colony of *Plimouth*, by taking away several of the most useful Props thereof, both in Church and Civil State ; some others who had been of singular use, now stooping under the infirmities of old age, could not be so serviceable as in times past ; and others removed so far from the center of the Government, that they could not without great difficulties attend their publick concerns, nor could possibly so constantly as our necessities required, which did greatly aggravate our troubles : we were become weak, when we had need of greatest strength ; had lost many of our Chieftains ; when we stood in need of the best conduct and guidance : for besides the troubles and changes that then attended our Native Country, and might call for great circumspection in our walking in relation unto them ; we had also at this very time, some amongst us that growing weary of the long peace and concord that we had enjoyed, and hoping to fish better in troubled waters, when their bait might be taken in, and the hook not easily discerned, would willingly have been

ringing

ringing the Changes in this Jurisdiction also, pretending a great zeal for liberty of Conscience, but endeavouring to introduce such a liberty of Will, as would have proved prejudicial, if not destructive to Civil and Church societies : and at the same time there arrived in the said Colony many of that pernicious sect called *Quakers*, whose Opinion are a composition of many errors, and whose practices tend greatly to the disturbance both of Church and State ; many unstable people amongst us were leavened with their errors, and proved very troublesome to this as well as other Colonies in *New-England*. But the Lord many times delighteth to appear in the Mount of his Peoples miseries, distresses and troubles, that his power and wisdom may appear when they are weakest, and that they may know that their salvation is from him. At such a time, &c when the condition of this Colony was such as hath been declared, God was pleased to minde it, even in its low estate; and when he had taken to himself not only our *Moses*, but many of the Elders and Worthies of our *Israel*, he hath not hitherto left us without a *Josua* to lead us in the remaining part of our pilgrimage. When the usual time for the renewing of our Election of such as should govern us came, Mr. Thomas Prince was by unanimous vote chosen Governour ; and although mens spirits were so distempered as I have related, and it might have been expected that they would have been much divided in their choice ; yet God (who disposeth the lot that is cast into the lap) so disposed that all their votes centered there : a good demonstration that he was chosen of God for us, and by his blessing made an Instrument of much peace and settlement in this place, and to this people, in these times of trouble and confusion. The Lord also directing the Freemen of this Jurisdiction at the same time in their Election to the choice of a discreet and able Council, to be assistant unto our said honoured Governor in this so weighty Work, divers of them being descended of several of the honour'd Magistrates deceased ; not only bearing their Names, but having a large measure of their Spirit bestowed on them, befitting them for such Work ; so as through the goodness of God, those

forms

Quakers came
to new England
1657

storms that seem'd to threaten the subversion of our All, and did at first prevaile, to the disturbing and shaking of many Towns and Churches, and to the great discouragement of the Ministers in divers places, do seem to be pretty well blown over ; such uncomfortable jarrs (as have been sometimes thought uncureable) seem to be throughly reconciled and healed, our Towns for the most part supplied with godly and able Ministers, and we sit under our Vines and Figtrees in peace, enjoying both Civil and Religious Liberties : For which goodness of the Lord, let his holy Name be praised ; and may he grant us so to improve our present opportunities, as he may have some suitable returns, and we may have cause to hope in his grace for the continuance of such favours.

This Year that much honoured and worthy Gentleman, Mr. *Theophilus Eaton*, Governour of *New-Haven*, deceased ; who was very Eminent both on a Religious and Civil account : His death proved a great blow to that Jurisdiction, and was seconded (not long after) with the loss of another precious man amongst them, viz. Mr. *Francis Newman*.

*The losſ of Mr.
Garret's Ship.*

In this year 1657, in the moneth of November, Mr. *Garret* set sail on a Voyage for *England* from *Boston* ; in whose Ship, amongst many considerable Passengers, there went Mr. *Thomas Mayhew* junior, of *Martins-Vineyard*, who was a very precious man : he was well skill'd, and had attained to a great proficiency in the *Indian Language*, and had a great propensity upon his Spirit to promote Gods glory in their Conversion, whose Labours God blessed for the doing of much good amongst them ; in which respect he was very much missed amongst them, and bewailed by them : as also in reference unto the Preaching of Gods Word amongst the *English* there. The losſ of him was very great. Many other sad losses befell sundry others in the Country by the loss of that Ship, both in their Estates and dear Relations, to the great grief and sadness of the hearts of many.

1 6 5 8.

THIS year Mr. Thomas Prince was Elected Governor of
the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth.

Mr. William Collier,

Mr. John Alden,

Captain Thomas VVillet,

Capt. Josias VVinslow,

Lieut. Tho: Southworth,

Mr. William Bradford, &

Mr. Thomas Hinkley,

Were Elected his Assistants
in Government.

This Year there was a very great Earthquake in New-Eng-
land.

Also Mr. Ralph Partridge died in a good old Age, having for
the space of forty years dispensed the Word of God with
very little impediment by sickness: His pious and blameless life
became very advantagious to his Doctrine; he was much ho-
noured and loved by all that conversed with him. He was of a
sound and solid judgement in the main Truths of Jesus Christ,
and very able in Disputation to defend them; he was very
singular in this, That notwithstanding the pausity and poverty
of his Flock, he continued in his Work amongst them to the
end of his life. He went to his grave in peace, as a shock of
Corn fully ripe, and was honourably buried at Duxbury.

In whose Remembrance, one who was a true Admirer of his
worth, presented these at his Funeral.

Not Rage, but Age, not Age, but Gods Decree,
Did call me hence, my Saviour Christ to see,
And to embrace, and from his hand receive
My Crown of Glory: Oh who would not leave
A flattering World, nay Friends, or what's most dear,
The Saints Communion that's enjoyed here.

At once to have God, Christ, Saints, Angels all,
 To make compleat, and sum our Joyes totall?
 Now I behold Gods Glory face to face;
 Now I sit down with Christ, who^ove run my Race;
 Now I sing praise to God, and to the Lamb;
 Now I Companion to the Angels am;
 Now I behold with greatest joy my Sons
 And Daughters all; I mean Converted ones,
 Which I was instrumentall in my place
 To bring to God, but all of his Free-grace.
 How am I Changed! that of late was weak,
 Above the force of Satan now to break?
 How am I Changed! Son of sorrow late,
 But now triumphing in my heavenly state.
 How was I vex'd with pains, with griefs molested!
 How in a moment am I now Invested
 with Royal Robes, with Crowns, with Diadems,
 With Gods Eternall Loves? Such precious Gems
 He hath in store for them his Saints that are;
 For such indeed he counts his Jewels rare.
 Oh Brethren, Sisters, Neighbours, Country, Friends,
 I'me now above you: Hark to them God sends,
 As yet surviving in their Worthy Charge,
 Whose work it is Gods Vineyard to enlarge.
 God and my Conscience, your experience knows,
 Whiles I was with you, I was one of those
 That labour'd faithfully Gods Vineyard in,
 Sowing his Seed, and plucking up of Sin.
 Now is the Harvest to my self indeed;
 The Lord grant a supply of one to feed
 Your Souls with heavenly food, and one to lead
 In ways of God, untill his Courts you tread.
 Next to Gods love, my Flock, love one another;
 And next to Christ, preserve love to thy Brother.
 Let ever precious be in your esteem
 Gods holy Word; and such as slight it, deem

Of Serpents brood: whatever they pretend,
By no means to such Blasphemies attend.
Decline all wanderings, lest from all you stray;
If stept aside, return in this your day
Keep close to God, so be that is Most High; and this
Shall you preserve as Apple of his Eye.
And give you peace, on Earth Tranquillity,
Mansions in Heaven to Eternity;
VWhere we that Death doth for a time now sever,
Shall meet, embrace; and shall not part for ever.
R um is his Race, his : still to bring about our
A nd his work done; still to be behind all else
L est Earthly place, or even mortal has now this
P artridge is gone, sailing upon New Englands ocean
H o's with the Father and the Son; 23.9
and in the quiete very great Cost

P ure joyes and constant do attend
A ll that so live, such is their end. V
R eturn he shall with Christ again, I
T o Judge both just and sinful men. I
R ai'd is this Bird of Paradise? I
I oy Heaven entred breaks the ice. I
D eath under foot he trodden hath; A
G race is to Glory straitest Path; I.
E ver enjoys Love free from wrath.

This year, on the last day of July, it pleased God that by Thunder and Lightning one John Philips of Marshfield, in the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth, was suddenly slain.

Also in the month of August it pleased God to take away by death Mr. William Paddy, who was a precious Servant of Christ, endued with a meek and quiet Spirit, of a courteous behaviour to all men, and was very careful to nourish an intimate Communion with God: He was instrumental in his place for common good both in the Church, (being sometimes

by Office a Deacon of the Church of Christ at *Plimouth*) and in other respects very officious as occasion did require. He having a great Temporal Estate, was occasioned thereby to have abundance of business upon him: but when he was to put off this his earthly Tabernacle, he laid aside all his earthly Incumbrances and Occasions, even as one would have taken off a garment, and laid it down; and without any trouble of Spirit (on that behalf) prepared himself for his Journey to the Everlasting Mansions, prepared for him by his Lord and Master in the highest Heavens, whereof he was well assured; as to the like effect he spake some words to Mr. *Norton*, near unto the period of his life: and so falling asleep in the Lord, he was buried at *Boston* with honour and great lamentation; in the year and moneth above-mentioned.

One who was well acquainted with his Worth and gracious Endowments, presented this following as a Testimoniall of his good respects of him.

W eep not dear Wife, Childeeren, nor dear Friends,
 I live a life of Joyes that never ends.
 L ove God, and fear him to end of your dayes:
 L ike unto him, but die to sin alwayes.
 I n heavenly place of Bliss my Soul doth rest
 A mong the Saints and Angels I am blest;
 M uch better here, then in the world at best.

P raising my God is now my great employ,
 A bove such troubles as did me annoy.
 D id but my friends know what I here posseſſ,
 D oubtless it would cause them to mourn the less:
 Y our Souls with mine ere long shall meet in bliss.

1659

1659.

This Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governoour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Collier,

Mr. John Alden,

Captain Thomas Willet,

Major Josias Winslow,

Lieut. Thomas Southworth,

Mr. William Bradford, &c

Mr. Thomas Hinkley,

were Chosen Assistants
to him in Government.

Having noted before, That in the Year 1657. there arrived in the Colony of New-Plimouth many of that pernicious Sect called *Quakers*, the Reader may take notice, That by this time, and for some years after, New-England (in divers parts of it) abounded with them, and they sowed their corrupt and damnable Doctrines, both by word and writings; almost in every Town of each Jurisdiction; some whereof were, *That all men ought to attend to the Light within them to be the Rule of their Lives and Actions*; and, *That the holy Scriptures were not for the enlightning of man, nor a settled and permanent Rule of life*. They denied the Manhood of the Lord Jesus Christ, and affirmed, *That as Man he is not in Heaven*. They denied the Resurrection from the dead. They affirmed, *That an absolute Perfection in Holines or Grace is attainable in this life*. They placed their Justification upon their Patience and Suffering for their Opinions, and on their righteous life, and retired demurity, and affected singularity both in word and gesture.

As to Civil account, they allowed not nor practised any civil respect to man, though superiors, either in Magistratical consideration, or as Masters, or Parents, or the Ancient, neither by word nor gesture. They deny also the use of Oathes for

the deciding of Civil Controversies; with other abominable Opinions, Dreams, and Conceits, which some of them have expressed, tending to gross Blasphemy and Atheism.

This efficacy of Delusion became very prevalent with many, so as the number of them increased, to the great endangering of the subversion of the whole, both of Church and Commonwealth, notwithstanding the endeavours of those in Authority to suppress the same, had not the Lord declared against them, by blasting their Enterprizes & Contrivements, so as they have of late withered away in a great measure; sundry of their Teachers and Leaders which have caused them to erre, are departed the Country, and we trust the Lord will make the folly of the remainder manifest to all men more and more. Errour is not long-lived; the day will declare it. Let our deliverance from so eminent a danger, be received amongst the principal of the Lords gracious Providences, and merciful loving Kindnesses towards New-England, for the which let present and future generations celebrate his Praises.

This year that Learned and godly Servant of God, Mr. Henry Dunster, fell asleep in the Lord. He was sometimes President of Harvard Colledge at Cambridge in New-England, in which he approved himself to the satisfaction of such as were in those Affairs concerned. Afterwards he came into the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth, and lived awhile in the Town of Scituate, and was useful in helping to oppose the abominable Opinions of the Quakers fore-mentioned, and in the defending of the Truth against them. He deceasing in the said Town of Scituate, his Body was embalmed, and removed unto Cambridge aforesaid, and there honourably buried.

1660.

THIS Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governor of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Collier,

Mr. John Alden,

Captain Thomas Willet,

Major Josias Winslow,

Capt. Tho: Southworth,

Capt. William Bradford, &c

Mr. Thomas Hinkley,

} were Chosen Assistants to him in Government.

This year James Pierce, a young man that belonged to Bon coming on Fishing; and upon occasion putting into Plimouth Harbour, it pleased God that a storm of Thunder and Lightning arose, and by a blow thereof he was slain of a sudden, being much scorched and burnt thereby, although his Clothes were made fast and close about him: so strange was this great work to the wonderment of all that beheld it.

1661.

THIS Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governor of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Collier,

Mr. John Alden,

Captain Thomas Willet,

Major Josias Winslow,

Capt. Thomas Southworth,

Capt. William Bradford, &c

Mr. Thomas Hinkley,

} Chosen Assistants to him in Government.

1662.

1662.

Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governoour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Collier, Mr. John Alden, Captain Thomas Willet, Major Josias Winflow, Capt. Thomas Southworth, Capt. William Bradford, & Mr. Thomas Hinkley,	}	were Chosen his Assistants in Government.
--	---	---

This Year upon occasion of some suspition of some plot intended by the Indians against the English; Philip the Sachem of Pocanaket, otherwife called Metacomet, made his appearance at the Court held at Plimouth, August 6. did earnestly desire the continuance of that amity and friendship that hath formerly been between the Governoour of Plimouth and his deceaseth Father and Brother: and to that end the said Philip doth for himself and his successors desire, that they might for ever remain subject to the King of England, his heirs and successors; and doth faithfully promise and engage, that he and his, will truly and exactly obserue and keep inviolable, such conditions as formerly have been by his Predecessors made; and particularly, that he will not at any time, needlesly or unjustly, provoke or raise War with any of the Natives; nor at any time give, sell, or any way dispose of any Lands (to him or them appertaining) to any strangers, or to any without our privity or appointment; but will in all things endeavour to carry peaceably, and inoffensively towards the English.

And the said Court did then also expref their willingness to continue with him and his, the abovesaid friendship, and do on their part promise, that they will afford them such friendly assistance

sistance by Advice and otherwise, as they justly may : And we will require our *English* at all times to carry friendly towards them. In witness whereof the said *Philip* the Sachem hath set to his Hand, as also his Uncle, and Witnessed unto by sundry other of his chief men.

Witness, John Saufamen.

The mark  *of* Francis
the Sachem of Nauset.

The mark  *of* Philip
alias Metacomet.

This year, on the 26 of January, at the shutting in of the Evening, there was a very great Earthquake in *New-England*, and the same night another, although something less then the former.

And again, on the 28 of the same moneth there was another about Nine of the clock in the morning.

Forasmuch as I have had special occasion several times in this History to mention divers Earthquakes that have been in *New-England*, they being great and terrible works of God, and are usually ominous to some ; strokes and visitations of his hand unto places and peoples where they are ; and sometimes the Lord in the very acting of his power in them, hath declared his severity to the children of men, to their great overthrow and confusion :

I thought it necessary, before I pass on, a little to point at some few particulars, to work and induce us to a profitable remembrance of them ; it being very considerable that is said by a useful Author, in taking notice of the Wisdome of God, in preparing the Earth to be a fit Habitation for man to dwell in, addeth withall, *That as if man were not alwayes worthy to tread upon so solid a foundation, We see it oft-times quake and shake, and rock and rend it self, as if it shewed that he which made it threatened by this trembling the Impiety of the world, and the ruine of those that dwell on the Earth.*

In order unto that which I have nominated in this behalf, and more principally intend, let us take notice, That Writers have rendered the cause of Earthquakes to be, *That when it*

~~24.4~~ ^{m.} happeneth that Air and Windy Spirits and Exhalations are shut up in the Caverns of the Earth, or have such passage as is too narrow for them, they then striving to break their prisons, shake the Earth, and make it tremble. They speak likewise of the several kindes of them : as

~~24.4~~ ^{ed. this year} First, When the whole force of the Wind driveth to one place, there being no contrary motion to let or hinder it; many Hills and Buildings have beene rushed down by this kinde of Earthquake, especially when the Wind causing it was strong: for if it be a feeble Wind, it onely looseneth or unfasteneth Foundations; if less feeble, then without further harm the Earth onely shakes, like one sick of an Ague.

Secondly, The second kinde is a swelling of the Earth; the which, when the Wind is broken out of its prison, the Earth returns to its place again.

Thirdly, A third kinde is, A gaping, rending, or cleaving of the Earth one part from another, so that sometimes whole Towns, Cities, Rocks, Hills, Rivers, and some parts of the Sea hath been swallowed up, and never seen more.

Fourthly, A fourth kinde is, Shaking that causeth sinking, and is farre different from the former; for now the Earth splitteth not, but sinketh: this being in such places where though the surface of the ground be solid, yet it hath but a salt foundation, which being moistened by water driven through it by the force of the shaking Exhalation, is turned into water also.

Fifthly, A fifth kinde of Earthquake is contrary to the former; for as before the ground sinks down, so now it is cast up, like as in the second kinde already mentioned: onely this is the difference, that now it returneth not to its place again, but remains a great Mountain. And note, that if such a Rising be in the Sea, it not onely causeth over flowings, but produceth likewise many Islands, such as were never seen before.

These particulars are treated of at large by approved Authors, and here onely hinted, to the intent that we may take notice of the special Providence of God to New-England in this

*This was the
Atlantick Ocean caused to be
a Sea, as Plato
affirmeth, who
lived 366 years
before Christ
was born.*

this behalfe, that we have not as yet felt the misery of the worst of the kindes of Earthquakes forenamed, nor swallowed up in them, but those we have been sensible of have been rather gentle Warnings unto us, to shake us out of our earthly-mindednes, spiritual security, and other sins, lest the Lord do come against us with Judgements of this kinde in the foreſt and worſt ſort of them, or otherwise by removing the preſent bleſſing of godly Government from us.

Notwithſtanding that which hath been ſaid, the Efficient Cause is Supernatural, as either principally God, or instrumentally the Angels, although naturally the Wind shut up within the Pores and Bowels of the Earth, as is before-noted.

If the Effects of them usually are ſuch, as by them is ſometimes a discovery of the Channels of Water, and Foundations of the World, the Removing of Mountains from one place to another, the Cleaving of Rocks, and opening of Graves and of Gates, yea the throwing down of many famous Buildings and Cities, and ſome swallowed up, and many thouſands of people destroyed thereby; the turning of plain Land into Mountains; the throwing down of Mountains, and raiſing up of Islands in the Sea, the breaking out of Rivers where there were none before; the discovery of burning Mountains where there were none ſeen before; Famine and Peſilence: (of which particulars divers instances might be produced out of the Sacred Scriptures, and ſeveral other Authors;) Ought we not then to fear and tremble before ſo great a God, who (as one faith) by his Handmaid Nature doth ſo terribly ſtare the Earth, as no Land can be ſure, no place ſo ſtrong that can defend us? Nay, the more ſtrong, the more dangerous; for, the higher, the greater the fall. Let us therefore ſay with the Wife-man,

I know that whatſoever God doth, shall ſtand for ever; nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and God doth it that men ſhould fear before him.

Exod. 19. 18.
Pſal. 29. 6. &c.
104. 32.
Marth. 28. 2.
Pſal. 18. 15.
Zech. 14. 4.
Rev. 6. 12, 14.
Mat. 27. 51.
Act. 16. 25.

This Year Mr. John Brown ended this life; in his younger Years travelling into the low Countries, he came acquainted with, and took good liking to the Reverend Pastor of the

Church of Christ at *Leyden* as also to sundry of the Brethren of that Church; which ancient amity induced him (upon his coming over to *New England*) to seat himself in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*, in which he was chosen a Magistrate; in which place he served God and the Country several Years; he was well accomplished with abilities, to both civil and religious concernments, and attained through Gods grace unto a comfortable persuasion of the love and favour of God to him; he falling sick of a Feaver, with much serenity and spiritual comfort, fell asleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at *Wannamoisett* near *Rehoboth*, in the spring of the Year above-said.

1663.

THIS YEAR MR. THOMAS PRINCE WAS CHOSEN GOVERNOUR OF THE JURISDICTION OF *NEW-PLIMOUTH*:

Mr. William Collier, Mr. John Alden, Capt. Thomas Willet, Major Josias Winiflow, Capt. Thomas Southworth, Capt. William Bradford Mr. Thomas Hinckley,	}	were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.
---	---	---

This year Mr. Samuel Newman, Teacher of the Church of Christ at *Rehoboth*, changed this life for a better. He was sometimes Preacher of Gods Word at *Weymouth* in the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts*, and from thence removed to *Rehoboth*, where he continued in the Work of the Ministry until the end of his dayes. He was a lively dispenser of the Word of God, and of a pious life, very hospitable, and at the close of his life very full of joy and comfort; and with cheerfulness

of spirit resigned himself up to the Lord, and his Spirit into arms of his blessed Redeemer, desiring that the holy Angels might do their office in transporting his Soul into everlasting bliss and happiness. He fell asleep in the Lord on the the fifth of July 1663.

This year also it pleased God to put a speedy period to the life of Mr. John Norton, who was a burning and a shining Light; and although the Church of Boston in a more special manner felt the smart of this sudden blow, yet it reflected upon the whole Land. He was singularly endowed with the Tongue of the Learned, inable to speak a word in due season, not onely to the wearied Soul, but also a word of Counsel to a people in necessity thereof, being not onely a wise Steward of the things of Jesus Christ, but also a wise Statesman; so that the whole Land sustained a great loss of him. At his first coming over into New-England, he arrived at Plimouth, where he abode the best part of one Winter, and Preached the Gospel of the Kingdome unto them; and ever after to his dying day retained a good affection unto them: From thence he went to Boston, and from thence to Ipswich in New-England, where he was chosen the Teacher of their Church; and after the death of worthy Mr. Cotton he was sollicited, and at length obtained to return to Boston, and there served in that Office untill his death. He was chosen by the Jurisdiction of the Massachusetts, together with the much honoured Mr. Simon Bradstreet, to go over into England as Agents in the behalf of that Jurisdiction, unto His Majesty and the Privy-Council, upon Busines of greatest Trust and Concernment; and soon after his Return, it pleased God suddenly and unexpectedly to take him away by death on the fifth day of April, 1663. His Body was honourably buried at Boston. On whose much lamented death take this following Elegie.

This year we built the first windmill
And the Quinsey when samuell Newman dyed of it
An

PE

(5.5.63)

An Elegie on the Death of that Eminent Minister of the Gospel, Mr. John Norton, the Reverend Teacher of the Church of Christ at Boston, who exchanged this life for a better April 5. 1663.

Ask not the reason why Tears are our meat,
And none but Mourners seen in ev'ry street?
Our Crown (alas) is fain from our head;
We finde it off: Woe to us, NORTON's dead!
Our breach is like the Sea, no healing's known:
To comfort Sions daughter is there none?
Oh teach your daughters Wailing every one,
Their Neighbours deepest Lamentation!
Oh that mine eyes a Fountain were of Tears!
I'd day and night in Mourning spend my years.
My Father! Father! Israels Chariots thou
And Horsemen wer't! Sons of the Prophets now
Weep, since your Master from your head is taken:
This Father of the Muses hath forsaken
His Study here, not liking our dark Roome,
Doth chuse those Mansions in his Fathers Home.
The Schoolmen's Doctors, whomsoe'er they call
Subtile, Seraphick, or Angelicall:
Dull Souls! their Tapers burnt exceeding dim:
They might to School again to learn of 'em.
Lombard must out of date: we now profess
Norton the Master of the Sentences.
Scotus, a Dunce to him: Should we compare
Aquinas here, none to be named are.
Of a more heavenly strain his Notions were,
More pure, sublime, Scholastical and cleare:
More like the Apostles Paul and John I wist,
Was this our Orthodox Evangelist.

And

*And though an Exile from his Native Land,
As John in Patmos was ; yet here the hand
Of Christ leads forth more clearly to espy
The New-Jerusalem in her bravery.*

*who more Acute in Judgement was then he ?
More famous too for Heavenly Policie ?
He was a wise and faithful Counsellor,
One of a thousand, an Interpreter.*

*Mighty in Word and Prayer, who could have
what're almost from Heaven he did crave :
On him, with things without (which I'll not name)
The care of all the Churches daily came.*

*He car'd thus naturally : Oh hear that Rod
Which us bereav'd of such a Man of God !
Zealons for Order ; very Criticall
For what was truly Congregationall.*

*A Pillar of our Church and State was he ;
But now No more, no more his face we see !
Who thought more fit of all his Tribe to stand
Before our King, for favour for our Land
Lately ? but now translated is to Rest
This Agent of New-Englands Interest.*

*VVhen last he Preach'd, he us the Patern gave
Of all that Worship Christ in's Church would have :
God then him up into the Mount did call,
To have the Vision Beatificall.*

*As Thomas to the Twelve said [Come, let's go
And die with him] I'd almost said so too :
I'll yet awhile in Tears sowe, that I may
VVith him in joyful Reapings live for ay.*

*A Tomb now holds his Souls beloved Shrine,
Of th' Holy Ghost a Temple most divine.
And will New-Englands Heart may rent at this?
VVonder not, Reader, I so greatly miss
Fit words, his Worth, our loss and grief to fame,
VWhen as no Epitaph can declare the same.*

T. S.

Not long after, viz. in the moneth of July, followed the death of that Eminent Servant of God, Mr. Samuel Stone, who was another Star of the first Magnitude in the Firmament of New-England. He was a learned, solid, and judicious Divine, equally able for the Confirmation of the Truth, and Confutation of Errours. His Ministry was with much Conviction and Demonstration, and when he set himself to Application, very Powerful. He was Teacher to the Church of Hartford fourteen years together with Mr. Hooker, and sixteen years after him, Thirty years in all: He died on the 20th of July, and was honourably buried at Hartford.

*A Threnodia upon our Churches second dark Eclipse,
happening July 20. 1663, by Deaths Interposition
between us and that Great Light and Divine Plant,
Mr. Samuel Stone, late of Hartford in New-England.*

*L*ast Spring this Summer may be Autumn styl'd,
Sad withering Fall our Beauties which destroy'd:
Two choicest Plants, our Norton and our Stone,
Your Justs threw down; remov'd, away are gone.
One Year brought Stone and Norton to their Mother
In one Year April July them did smother:
Dame Cambridge Mother to this darling Son,
Emmanuel, Northampt' that heard this one,

Essex,

Essex, our Bay, Hartford, in Sable clad,
 Come bear your parts in this Threnodia sad.
 In losing One, Church many lost: O then
 Many for One come be sad singing men.
 May Nature, Grace and Art be found in one
 So high, as to be found in few or none?
 In him these Three with full-franght hand contested
 With which by each he shold be most invested.
 The Largeſt of the Three it was ſo great
 On him, the Stone was held a Light compleat:
 A Stone more then the Eben-ezer fam'd;
 Stone ſplendent Diamond, right Orient nam'd;
 A Cordiall Stone, that often cheareſt hearts
 With pleasant Wit, with Goffel rich imparts;
 Whet-Stone, that Edgeſt th' obtuſeſt Minde;
 Load-Stone, that drew the Iron Heart unkinde;
 A Ponderous Stone, that woulde the Bottom ſound
 Of Scripture-depths, and bring out Arcan's found;
 A Stone for Kingly David's uſe ſo fit,
 As woulde not fail Goliah's Front to hit;
 A Stone an Antidote, that brake the course
 Of Gangrene Erron by Convincing force;
 A Stone Acute, fit to diuide and ſquare;
 A Squared Stone, became Chrifl's Building rare;
 A Peter's Living lively Stone, (ſo Rrear'd)
 As live, was Hartfords life; dead, death is feared.
 In Hartford old, Stone firſt drew Infant-breath;
 In New effus'd his laſt: O there beneath
 His Corps are laid, near to his darling Brother,
 Of whom dead oft he ſigh'd, Nor ſuch another.
 Heaven is the more desireable (ſaid he)
 For Hooker, Shepard, and Haynes Company.

Mr. Hooker.

E. B.

1 6 6 4.

THIS Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governoour of
the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. William Collier,

Mr. John Alden,

Captain Thomas Willet,

Major Jas Winflow,

Capt. Tho. Southworth,

Capt. William Bradford, &

Mr. Thomas Hinkley,

} were Chosen Assistants to
him in Government.

This year a *Blazing-Star* or *Comet* appeared in *New-England*, in the Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh, and the beginning of the Twelfth Moneth: Concerning which, it hath been observed, That such was its motion, that in all likelihood it was visible to all the Inhabitants of the Earth; and that also in its motion the *Blaze* of it did turn to all the quarters of the World; and that by its turning according to the several Aspects it had to the Sun, it was no fiery Meteor caused by Exhalation, but that it was sent immediately by God to awake the secure World.

I willingly close with that which Mr. Samuel Danforth hath Religiously observed, as to the *Theological Application* of this strange and notable Appearance in the Heavens, That indeed by the *Testimony of the Sacred Scriptures, and the common Histories of former Ages*, Comets do usually recede, and portend great Calamities, and notable Changes.

To add a few more Instances to those the said Author hath well observed.

When the Emperor Jovian attained to the Empire, (succeeding the Apostata Julian, under whom the Church suffered much Persecution) and that under him both Church and Commonwealth were like to have had a flourishing time, had

he

he not been taken away by sudden death; Then also appeared Socrates, lib. a Comet, shewing that further trouble was yet to be expected & Cap. 22. to the Church.

Again, other Authors make mention of a strange Comet that was seen in the year of Christ 410, being like a Two-edged Sword, which portended many Mischiefs and Calamities that happened both in the East and West, and such great slaughters of men were about those dayes, as no Age ever afforded the like: All Europe was in a manner undone; no small part of Asia was affrighted; and Africa also was not void of those Evils, as War, Famine, Drought and Pestilence; all of them strove as it were to trouble the whole World.

Also in the Years 1400, 1401, 1402, 1403, Comets appeared, and great Calamities followed; sundry unheard-of Diseases were felt, Rivers dried up, and Plagues were increased; Tamerlaine, King of the Scythians and Parthians, with an innumerable Host invaded Asia, calling himself The Wrath of God, and Desolation of the Earth.

Also in the Year 1529 appeared four Comets; and in the Years 1530, 1532, and 1533, were seen in each year one.

Lanquet saith, That there were three within the space of two years, upon which these and the like Calamities followed; viz. A great Sweating Sickness in England, which took away great multitudes of people; The Turk in the quarrel of John Hunyady, who laid Claim to the Crown of Hungary, entered the said Kingdome with Two hundred and fifty thousand fighting Souldiers, committing against the Inhabitants thereof most harsh and unspeakable Murthers, Rapes, Villanies and Cruelties. Great Famine and Dearth in Venice, and the Countries thereabouts, which swept away many; The Sweating Sickness in Brabant, and in a great part of Germany.

Great Wars likewise about the Dukedom of Milan, between the Emperour Charles the Fifth, and Francis the French King.

About that time also all Lusitania or Portugal was struck

Reade Carion,
lib. 5. pag. 854.

with an Earthquake, insomuch that at *Vlissipo*, or *Lisbon*, above a Thousand Houses were thrown down, and Sixty more so shaken that they were ready to fall: with many other Evils that befell those parts about that time.

And to observe what hath fallen out since this last *Comet* appeared, will not be unuseful, either in *Europe*, or in *America*.

In *Europe*, the great Contest between our own Nation and the *Dutch*, which hath threatned bloody War; and what will be in the conclusion, is known onely to God: Besides other Contests between the *Dutch* and some other of their Neighbours; as also the Pestilence very hot both in *England* and *Holland*.

Since the witting her of there have been sad engagements betwixt the two Nations, and much Blood spilt.

In *America*, the late and sad blow that our Countrymen at the Isle *Christophers* received from the *French*. And as to our selves in *New-England*, although through the mercy of our good God there is no breaking in, nor going out into Captivity, nor complaining in our streets; yet we have been threatened with Invasion by Forreign Force, and sometimes in expectation thereof; as also we are not to slight the hand of God in his late sore Strokes in taking away so many by Thunder and Lightning, to the great amazement and terror of many: as also Gods continued strokes in Drought, Blasting, and Mildew, with which much of the Fruits of the Earth have been destroyed. All which considered, ought to induce us to search and try our wayes, and to enter into a strict and serious examination of our hearts and lives, and having found out what those sins are that are most provoking to the Majesty of Heaven, we may reform them, whether in Church, in State, in Family, or in Persons; that so he may not stir up all his wrath, but yet may delight over us to do us good, from the beginning of the year to the end thereof.

This year it pleas'd God to smite the Fruits of the Earth, viz. the Wheat in special, with Blasting and Mildew, whereby much of it was utterly spoiled, and became profitable for nothing, and much of it worth little, being light and empty. This was looked at by the judicious and conscientious of the Land,

Land, as a speaking Providence against the *Unthankfulness* of many for so great a mercy, and their *Murmuring* expressed in their words, by slighting and undervaluing terms of it: as also against Voluptuousness, and abuse of the good Creatures of God by Licentiousnes in Drinking, and Fashions in Apparel; for the obtaining whereof, a great part of this principal Grain was oftentimes unnecessarily expended. This so sad a Dispensation, with other particulars, occasioned the observation of some dayes in a way of Humiliation before the Lord, somewhat more frequently then ordinary. Let it also be observed, That yet *in judgement he remembred mercy*, by affording a plentiful Harvest of other sorts of Grain, so as the Country suffered not in respect of the want of Bread this year, but had plenty thereof.

This year also His Majesties Commissioners, *viz.* Colonel *Richard Nicolls*, Sir *Robert Carre* Knight, *George Cartwright* Esq; and *Samuel Maverick* Esq; Arrived at *Boston* in *New-England* in the moneth of *July*: The tenure of whose Commission was in special, *To reduce the Dutch at the Manhato's to His Majesties Obedience*; which in some short time was accomplished, and the Place and Jurisdiction thereof surrendered up unto His Majesties said Commissioners, who styled it by the Name of *New-York*, and placed a Government over it of His Majesties Subjects, the aforesaid honourable Colonel *Richard Nicolls* being Governour in chief there. And whereas they were likewise Commissionated *To hear and determine such Differences as might be amongst the Colonies, in respect unto the Bounds of their Jurisdictions*; Some such Differences were by them heard, and in special betwixt *Plimouth* and *Road-Island*, and such Settlement therein concluded as they were capacitated unto. As also sundry Propositions were by them made to severall of the respective Jurisdictions, which together with the Agitations concerning them, and the Answers unto them, are elsewhere extant. They likewise presented the honoured Governour of the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth* (as to that Colony) with a gracious Letter from His Majesty: The Contents whereof are as followeth.

To Our Trusty and Well beloved, Our Gouverneur and
Council of New-Plimouth, greet.

CHARLES REX.

To Our Trusty and well-beloved, We greet you well. We need not enlarge upon Our Care of, and Affection to that Our Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, when We give you such a Testimony & Manifestation of it, in the sending of those Gentlemen, persons well known unto Us, and deserving from us, Our trusty and well-beloved Colonel *Richard Nicolls*, Sir *Robert Carre* Knight, *George Cartwright* Esq; and *Samuel Maverick* Esq; our Commissioners to visit you, and other our Plantations in those parts of *New-England*, and to give us a full and particular Information and account of your present state and condition, and how the same may be advanced and improved by any further Acts of Grace and Favour from us towards you; and that both you and all the world may know and take notice, That we take you into our immediate protection, and will no more suffer you to be oppressed or injured by any foreign Power, or ill Neighbours, then we would suffer our other Subjects that live upon the same Continent with us, to be so injured and oppressed. And as our Care and Protection will (we doubt not) be sufficient with Gods blessing to defend you from foreign force; so our Care and Circumpection is no lets, that you may live in peace amongst your selves, and with those our other Subjects who have planted themselves in your neighbour Colonies, with that Justice, Affection, and brotherly Love, which

which becomes Subjects born under the same Prince, and in the same Country, and of the same Faith and Hope in the Mercies of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. And to the end there may be no Contentions and Differences between you, in respect of the bounds and Jurisdiction of your several Colonies; the hearing and determining whereof we have referred to our Commissioners, as the Right appears by clear Evidence and Testimony before them, or that they can settle it by your mutual Consent and Agreement; otherwise, in cases of difficulty, they shall present the same to us, who will determine according to our own Wisdome and Justice. The *Addres*s you formerly made to us, gave us so good satisfaction of your Duty, Loyalty and Affection to us, that we have not the least doubt that you will receive those Commissioners in such manner as becomes you, and as may manifest your respect and affection towards us, from whom they are sent. They will let you know the resolution we have to preserve all your Liberties and Priviledges, both Ecclesiastical and Civil, without the least violation; which we presume will dispose you to manifest by all wayes in your power, Loyalty and Affection to us, that all the world may know that you do look upon your selves as being as much our Subjects, and living under the same obedience under us, as if you continued in your natural Country. And so We bid you farewell.

*Given at Our Court at Whitehall, April 23. 1664.
in the Sixteenth Year of Our Reign.*

By His Majesties special Command,
HENRY BENET.

After the said His Majesties Commissioners had visited several of the Jurisdictions of New-England, and were courteously entertained in every of them, the said honourable Colonel Richard Nicolls is settled at New-York for the present, being Governour there, as is before-noted: George Cartwright Esq; went for England in the latter end of the year with Mr. Benjamin Gillam, and was taken by the Dutch, and afterwards with some difficulty arrived in England: Sir Robert Carre is at the present at Delaware, and Mr. Samuel Maverick at Boston.

The said Sir
Robert Carre
since that went
for England,
in the year 67.

He arrived at Bristol, and di^r there June 1. the next day after he came above. About that time it was thought by such as were judicious, That through the Instigation of the said Maverick, (whose spirit was full of Malicity against the Country) our both Civil and Religious Liberties were much endangered; and the rather for that probably there would have been a Concurrence of divers Ill-affectioned in the Land, had not the Lord prevented.

1665.

This year Mr. Thomas Prince was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth.

Mr. William Collier,
Mr. John Alden,
Major Josias Winslow,
Capt. Thomas Southworth,
Capt. William Bradford,
Mr. Thomas Hinkley, &
Mr. James Brown,

were Chosen Assistants
to him in Government.

In the Spring of this Year, that honourable Gentleman Mr. John Endicott, Governour of the Jurisdiction of the Massachusetts, changed this life for a better. He was a very virtuous Gentleman, and was greatly honoured and loved of the most, as he well deserved. He arrived at Salem in the year 1628.

1665
This April 13th day Peter Eishon went to and
the new country to view the new purchases
whereof was one of the purchasers

and had the chief Command of those that at the first there seated, and bare a deep share of the Difficulties of those first beginnings, which were great, by reason especially of the great Sicknes and Mortality that was then amongst them, as hath been before noted: There he continued, untill the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts* saw reasoun to desire his removal to *Boston*, for the more convenient Administration of Justice, as Governour of the said Jurisdiction, to which he was frequently Elected for many years together with little intermission; and in which honourable Service he served God and the Country, untill old Age, and the Infirmities thereof, coming upon him, he fell asleep in the Lord, and was with great honour and solemnity Interred at *Boston*.

This year it pleased God to cause a sad dispensation of his hand to pass before us, in reference to the sudden death of Captain *Davenport*, who in the Moneth of *July* was slain as he lay on his Bed with a blow of Thunder and Lightning. He was a man of some Eminency, being betrusted with the Command of the Castle in the *Massachusetts*; at which said Castle he was slain as aforesaid: The more ought this so sad stroke of God to be considered, and laid to heart, and improved for our humiliation, and the amendment of our lives before the great and terrible God, who so aloud spake unto us in this so sad and awing a Providence.

This year it pleased the Lord again to strike the Wheat of this Country in a more general way then the last year, with Blasting and Mildew, whereby the greatest part of it was spoiled, and the Plowmans hopes (in that respect) very much frustrated. Howbeit, the Lord still mixed with this affliction very much mercy, in sparing the other Grain, whereby the Country was in some good measure supplied.

1666.

This Year Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Governoour of
the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. John Alden,
Major Josias Winslow,
Capt. Thomas Southworth,
Capt. William Bradford
Mr. Thomas Hinckley,
Mr. James Brown, &
Lieut. John Fretman,

were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.

This year it pleased God to go on in a manifestation of his displeasure against *New-England*, in a very remarkable manner, by striking dead in a moment by a blow of Thunder, three persons in the Town of *Marlfield* in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*, in the moneth of *June*; viz. one named *William Shirtliff*, and a Woman and a Youth; which sad Dispensation of Gods hand, being considered with some Circumstances, gave cause to the beholders to be much astonished: the said *Shirtliff* having his Wife by the hand, and sitting by her to cheer her, in respect that the said storm was so fierce, he was slain, and she preserved, though in some measure scorched with the Lightning; yea, he had one of his Children in his arms, and himself slain, and the Childe preserved. We have likewise received intelligence of four more that about that time were slain by Thunder and Lightning about *Pascataqua*, and divers more hurt. At the time of this storm of Thunder and Lightning, in the which those of *Marlfield* died, there arose likewise a very great Whirlwind, that where it came it tore up Trees by the Roots, though through mercy it did little other hurt.

It was a great while, and many years spent since the *English* came

came into these parts, before any very considerable hurt was done by Thunder and Lightning to either man, or beast appertaining to them, although sometimes very fierce storms of that kinde, as frequently as in these times : but now how doth the Lord go on gradually in this, as in other Judgements here in New-England ? first by striking Cattel, and then one person at a time, and this year divers, to the number of seven, besides some Cattel also.

Thus God thundereth marvellously with his voice, he worketh great things which we know not : He can send the Lightnings that thy may walk, and say, Lo here we are. Hath any an arm like God ? or can any thunder with a voice like him ? By this his terrible Voice he breaketh the Cedars, and divideth the flames of fire ; which he commissionates to do his pleasure, sometimes not only striking Cedars, but great Oaks in a wonderful manner, sometimes Beasts, sometimes Men and Women. If Gods Judgements have thus been abroad in the Earth, how ought the Inhabitants (of New-England) to learn righteousness ? How easily can the Lord stain the pride of our glory with a stroke of his hand ? Let not the familiarity or frequency of such Providences, cause them to be neglected by us, to improve them as God would have us, to fear before him, and to turn from such iniquities especially as are most displeasing unto him, and to hold our lives in our hands, and to be in a readines for his pleasure, lest knowing not our time, as the fishes that are taken in an evil net, and as the birds that are caught in the snare, so we shall be snared in an evil time, when it falleth suddenly upon us.

This year the Lord threatened the Country with that infectious and contagious Disease of the Small Pox, which began at Boston, whereof some few died : but through his great mercy it is stayed, and none of late have died thereof.

This year the Lord likewise threatened, and in some measure executed his displeasure upon the Country by Drought ; but through his mercy dath of late sent plenty of Rain, for the recovering of the fruits of the earth. Although it is to be

Job 37. 5.

& 38. 35.

& 40. 8.

Psal. 29. 5,7.

Isaiah 26. 9.

Eccles. 8. 13.

Eccles. 9. 12.

observed, That soon after a day of Humiliation was observed by some Congregations, for the blessing of Rain in the Drought above-mentioned, that sad stroke by the Thunder and Lightning at Marſfield fell out: so that we may say with the Psalmist unto the Lord, *By terrible things in Righteousness thou hast answered us, O God of our Salvation.*

Also this year there hath been some ground of fear of Invasion by Forreign Enemies; but hitherto the Lord hath kept us.

This year much of the Wheat is destroyed with Blasting and Mildew, as also some other Grain by Worms, and the Drought aforementioned; but the Lord hath sent much Rain for the recovery of the remainder, through his great mercy.

This year, about the middle of July, Mr. Thomas Prince Governor of the Jurisdiction of Plimouth, Captain Thomas Southworth, Mr. John Eliot senior, Mr. John Eliot junior, Mr. Samuel Arnold, Mr. John Holmes, Mr. William Brinsmead, and Mr. Thomas Cusoman, gave meeting to Mr. Richard Bourne of Sandwich, in reference to the taking notice of what proficiency the Indians under the Instruction of the said Mr. Bourne have attained unto, in the knowledge of God in Christ, and their interest in him by Faith; and to make such Professions or Confessions as they should openly make thereof, to the glory of God, and the satisfaction of the Saints, in order unto their joyning into Church-fellowship.

And the Lord was pleased to come in unto some of them, so as they gave good satisfaction unto the said honoured and judicious persons forenamed, then assembled in reference to the premisses: So that it was concluded by them, That what had passed from the Indians in that behalf, should be drawn up in writing, and Copies thereof exhibited to the Churches of the Jurisdiction of Plimouth, such of them as are neighbouring near unto them; and if nothing should be then objected, that then in due and convenient time they should be permitted and encouraged to enter into Church-fellowship as aforesaid.

Now although I doubt not but the Passages of these things will

*A special Manifestation of
Gods goodness
towards some
poor Salvages
in the Jurisdiction
of New-
Plimouth.*

will be in due time published by a better Pen ; yet I have made bold here to insert so much as I have been informed of them, in regard that they are the first-fruits of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth, that have come on to so good perfection in this kinde.

This year, in the moneth of December, it pleased God to take unto himself by death that worthy Servant of Christ Mr. *William Thompson*, who was a lively dispenser of the Word of God, and very affectionate in the delivery therof. It pleased God to bless his Labours to the Conversion of many Souls. He was sometimes, together with Mr. *Knowles*, sent unto *Virginia* by the Elders of the Churches of the *Massachusetts*, being requested by a Message sent by some of *Virginia* for some help in Preaching Gods Word amongst them : The fruit and benefit of whose Labours therein, still remaineth upon the Souls of some eminent in this Land. He was Elected and Ordained to be Pastor of the Church of Christ at *Braintry* in *New-England*; in which Office he served Christ many years, untill old Age coming upon him, and the prevailing of his *Melancholly* dis-temper, did in a manner wholly disable him from that Service ; and Satan taking advantage thereby, he was under sad deser-tions and trouble of Spirit. At which time the Reverend Elders, and others of the aforesaid Jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts*, were very officious for his Recovery, and in sense of his sad condition offered up many Prayers to God for him, and in Gods good time they received a gracious answer ; so as in his weakness and sicknesse it pleased God to come in unto his Soul, and to remove the Cloud of darknes that was upon his Spirit, so that with much peace and comfort he fell asleep in the Lord, and his Body was honourably buried at *Braintry*. *Mark the upright man, and behold the just ; for the end of that man is peace.*

John Daret

1 6 6 7.

Mr. Thomas Prince was Chosen Goverour of the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth:

Mr. John Alden,	Chosen Assistants to him
Major Josias Winslow,	
Capt. Thomas Souleworth,	
Capt. William Bradford,	
Mr. Thomas Hinkley,	
Mr. John Freeman, &	in Government;
Mr. Nathaniel Bacon,	

This year on the last day of November, being the last day of the next week, there was heard several loud Noises or Reports, as if it had been Guns discharged in the Air, first one distinctly, and in a short time as it had been a Volley of Shot discharged: It was especially heard and observed at Nantasket, and related by sundry of them of good Credit.

In the Spring following, in the beginning of March, there appeared a Sign in the Heavens in the form of a Spear, something thicker in the middest then at either end, of a whitish bright colour; it was seen several nights together in the West, about an hour within the night: it stood stooping, and the one end pointing to the setting of the Sun, and so settled downward by little and little, until it quite vanished, and descended beneath our Horizon. *God awaken us, that we be not heedless spectators of his wonderful Works.*

This year, on the seventh of August, it pleased the Lord to call home to himself the Reverend, Ancient, and godly Pastor of the Church of Boston, Mr. John Wilson: He was a truely Reverend and holy Man of God; he came to New-England in the year 1630. He was instrumental in the first beginnings of the Church of Boston, having been the Pastor of it three years before

before Mr. *Cotton*, Twenty years with him, Ten years with Mr. *Norton*, and Four years after him; Thirty-seven in all: And in all the Changes of Times that passed over him, he was full of Faith and Prayer, and eminent for Sincerity and Humility, (being ever low in his own eyes;) and for the grace of Love, he had largeness of heart as the sand of the Sea, to do good to all. He was very charitable, where there was any signs and hopes of good, and yet withall very zealous against known and manifest evils. He was Orthodox in his Judgement, and very holy in his Conversation: Very few that ever went out of the world, so generally beloved and reverenced as this good man. He was a good man indeed, and full of the holy Ghost; He lived to a good old age, and was full of dayes, and full of honour, being in the Seventy ninth year of his Age, when the Lord took him to himself. He was Interred with much Honour and Lamentation.

In the time of his languishing Sicknes he was visited by the Elders round about, especially on the Sixteenth of May, the day after the Court of Election, when there being a general meeting of all the Elders of the Churches at his house, they requested Mr. *Wilson* (because they knew not whether ever they should have the like opportunity to hear him speak again, and having been from the first a Pillar amongst them, and of much Experience in his observation of the state of things) That he would solemnly declare to them, what he conceived to be those sins amongst us, which provoked the displeasure of God against the Country. He then told them, That he had divers times, and long feared these sins following, as chief among others, which God was greatly provoked with; viz.

1. Separation.
2. Anabaptism.
3. Corahism.

This latter he did explain thus; viz. When people rise up, as Corah, against their Ministers or Elders, as if they took too much upon them, when indeed they do but Rule for Christ, and according to Christ; yet (saith he) it is nothing for a Brother

to stand up, and oppose without Scripture or Reason, the Doctrine and Word of the Elder, saying; [I am not satisfied] &c. And hence, if he do not like the Administration, (be it Baptism, or the like) he will then turn his back upon God and his Ordinances, and go away, &c. And (saith he) for our neglect of baptizing the Children of the Church, those that some call Grandchildren, I think God is provoked by it.

4. Another sin I take to be, The making light of, and not subjecting to the Authority of Synods, without which the Church cannot long subsist. And so for the Magistrates being Gallio-like, either not caring for these things, or else not using their Power and Authority for the maintenance of the Truth, and Gospel, and Ordinances of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and for the bearing thorough witness against the contrary. Should the Lord leave THEM hereunto; how miserable a people should we be!

At night the Assembly being dismissed with Prayer, Mr. Wilson did (being desired by them so to do) in a solemn manner bless the Elders, making a short Prayer, saying; I am not likely long to be with you; the Lord pardon us, and heal us, and make us more Heavenly, and take us off from the world, and make us burning and shining Lights, by our heavenly Doctrine and Example. And I beseech the Lord with all my heart to bless you, and to bless his Churches, and to bless all his People, and to bless all your Families, and to bless your Wives, and to bless all your Children, and your Children's Children; and make us all more and more meet for our Inheritance, and bring us all to it in his good time, &c. These words, with some few other, he spake with great affection, and with tears: and all the Ministers wept with him, and they took their leave of him, even as Children of their Father, who having blessed them was about to die.

Upon

Upon the Death of that Reverend, Aged, Ever-honoured, and gracious Servant of Christ, Mr. John Wilson,
Pastor of a Church in Boston: Interred August 8.
1667.

A H! now there's none who does not know
That this day in our Israel
Is fall'n a great and good man too,
A Prince I might have said as well!

A man of Princely Power with God,
For Faith and Love of Princely spirit;
Our Israels Chariots, Horsemen good,
By Faith and Prayer, though not by Merit.

Renown'd for Practick Piety
In Englands both, from Youth to Age;
In Cambridge, Inns-Court, Sudbury,
And each place of his Pilgrimage.

As humble as a little Childe,
When yet in reall worth high-grown:
Himself a Nothing still he styl'd,
When God so much had for him done.

In Love a None-such: as the Sand
With largest heart God did him fill;
A bounteous Minde, an open Hand,
Affection sweet, all sweetning still.

Love was his Life; he dy'd in Love;
Love doth embalm his Memory;
Love is his Bliss and Joy, above
With God now who is Love for ay;

*A comprehending Charity
To all, where ought appear'd of good;
And yet in Zeal was none more high
Against th' apparent Serpents Brood.*

*To Truth he ever constant was,
In Judgement wondrous Orthodox;
In Truth's Cause never fearing face,
As if he were another Knox.*

*The Prelates and their Impositions
Did never him Conformist make;
But to avoid those Superstitions,
Great Worldly Hopes did he forsake.*

*When in New-England Errors wind
From sundry other Quarters blew;
No one could him Conforming finde,
Nought from the Line of Truth him drew.*

*Firm stood he 'gainst the Familist,
And Antinomian spirit strong,
He never lov'd the Separatist,
Nor yet the Anabaptists throng.*

*Neither the Tolerator's strain,
Nor Quakers Spirit could he brook;
Nor bow'd to the Morellian Train,
Nor Childrens Right did over-look.*

*Nor did he slight Our Liberties
In Civil and in Church-concernis,
But precious were they in his eyes
Who stood among their fixed friends.*

Grave Saint in England twice did give
 This farewell word to him, While you
 Shall in that place (New-England) live
 No hurt shall happen thereunto.

Strange word, and strangely verify'd!
 He this day goes to's Grave in peace.
 What Changes sad shall us betide
 Now he is gone, we cannot guess!

What Evil are we hastening to!
 Lord spare thy People, but awaken;
 When such away do from us go,
 That yet we may not be forsaken!

He a first Corner-stone was laid
 In poor New-England's Boston's Wall:
 Death pulls this out, the breach is wide:
 Oh let it not now tumble all!

Hee's now at Rest, and reigns in Bliss;
 In Conflicts we are left behinde,
 In Fears and Straits; How shall we miss
 His Faith, Frayer, Zeal, and peaceful Minde.

Lord pour a double portion
 Of his sweet, gracious, pious Spirit
 On poor Survivers! let each one
 Somewhat thereof at least inherit!

Gaius our host, ab now is gone!
 Can we e're look for such another?
 But yet there is a Mansion
 Where we may all turn-in together.

No moving Inne, but Resting-place,
Where his bleſt Soul is gathered;
Where good men going are apace
Into the Bosome of their Head.

Ay thither let us hafte away,
Sure Heaven will the ſweeter bee
(If there we ever come to stay)
For him, and other ſuch as bee!

J. M.

Upon the Death of that most Reverend Man of God,
Mr. John Wilson, Pastor of the first Church in
Boston, in New-England; whose deceafe was Aug. 7.
1667.

JOHN WILSON

Anag.

John WILSON.

Oh change if not! no ſweeter Name or Thing
Throughout the World within our ears shall ring.

VV Ho ſo of Abr'ām, Moses, Samuel reads,
Or of Elijah, or Elisha's deeds,
Would ſurely ſay their Spirit and Power was his,
And think there were a Metempychosis.
Tea, like John Baptist in the Wilderness,
So was our John in Patmos here, no less.
John the Divine, reſembling therefore rather,
And of New-Englands Prophets was the Father.

John

John the Divine, whose Life a Revelation
Of Faith, and Love, and Christ to admiration.
John the Divine, whom Jesus lov'd most dear,
Sweetned with leaning on his Bosome here:
This is that John, whose Death who doth not moan,
Hath sure no heart of flesh, but one of stone.
He had the Countries Faith, and Love, and Zeal,
Even Grace enough for Church and Common-weal;
Whereby was propt up all the Fabrick still,
That else had tumbled down our Sion Hill.
Of meery Men deserving glory more,
You'll finde nor Martyr, nor a Confessor.
Inspir'd he was with the Prophetick Spirit
Of all the Prophets, which he did inherit.
Twixt an Apostle and Evangelist,
His Order standeth in the Heavenly List.
If Paul himself among us dead had been,
More tears or sorrow could not have been seen:
They wept not more for this, that they should see
His face no more, then now we Mourners bee.
For Heavenly Poems, most Angelicall,
Composing Volumes with delight: were all
But gathered up in one, we should espy
Enough to fill an University.
And were another Psalm-book made by thee
[Mictam of John] their Title it should bee.
As aged John th' Apostle us'd to bless:
The People, which they judg'd their happiness:
So we did count it worth our Pilgrimage.
Unto him, for his Blessing in his Age:
Yet then, no Babe more longing for the Breast,
Then he to take within the Church his rest,
To have the sincere Milk of God's good Word,
Which to his Soul all comfort did afford:
Not Heat, nor Cold, nor Rain, nor Snow must bar,
But every Where becomes an Auditor.

*Who ever labour'd in the Ministry
More given, then he, to Hospitality ?
To Strangers, Widows, Fatherles and all,
To Friends and Foes he was most liberal,
Of all his Prayers, Sermons, Travels, Pains,
He is ascended Heaven to reap the gains.
Oh for a double portion of thy Spirit !
No richer Treasure would we all inherit.*

Mastus apposuit, T. S.

1668.

THIS Year it pleased God to visit *New-England* with the manifestation of his displeasure, by the death of three Eminent Instruments : The first whereof was that worthy Servant of Christ Mr. *Samuel Shepard*, Pastor of the Church of Christ at *Rowley* in *New-England*, who deceased in the Spring of this year, in the midst of his dayes, and in the beginning of his Work in the Ministry. The second, that worthy Man of God Mr. *Henry Flint*, Teacher of the Church of Christ at *Braintry* in *New-England*, who ended his mortal life the 27 of April in this year ; a man of known Piety, Gravity, and Integrity, and well accomplished with other Qualifications fit for the Work of the Ministry. The third and last, but not the least, that Supereminent Minister of the Gospel (rightly so called) Mr. *Jonathan Mitchell*, Pastor of the Church of Christ at *Cambridge* in *New-England*, who laid down his Earthly Tabernacle on the Ninth of July in this year : Of whose rare Endowments, and the great Loss the whole Land sustained by his death, take this following brief Account.

Mr. *Jonathan Mitchell* was born at *Halifax* in *York-shire* in *England*, of pious and wealthy Parents, who coming over

to

to New-England, brought him over young; his Education in Learning was perfected at Harvard Colledge in Cambridge, where he attained to such a degree in knowledge, that he was soon called to be a Fellow of the Colledge, and within few years after his lustre did so shine, that the Church at Hartford upon Connecticut River made application to him in order to supply the place of that Eminent Servant of Christ Mr. Thomas Hooker, a little before deceased; but the Church at Cambridge (by the Advice of their Pastor Mr. Thomas Shepard, then living) not willing to part with so great a Treasure, became Competitor with Hartford, and gave him a Call to them. This loving Strife between the two Churches of Hartford and Cambridge about him, was in a short time decided by the awfull hand of God, in the death of that Eminent and Glorious Star, Mr. Thomas Shepard, Pastor at Cambridge; which place being wholly destitute, and Hartford being supplied with a Teacher, namely, that Worthy of the Lord, Mr. Samuel Stone, the Ballance was cast for Cambridge, and in the year 1650 he was Called and Ordained their Pastor. It was an eminent favour of God to that Church, to have their great Breach thus made up, with a man so much of the Spirit and Principles of their former Pastor, and so excellently qualified with respect to the Colledge: for, Reason and Prudence requireth, that the Minister of that place be more then ordinarily endowed with Learning, Gravity, Wisdome, Orthodoxyne, Ability, sweet and excellent Gifts in Preaching, that so the Scholars which are devoted and set apart in order to be Preachers of the Gospel, might be seasoned with the Spirit of such an Elijah: In which regard, this holy Man of God was eminently furnished, and his Labours wonderfully blessed; for very many of the Scholars bred up in his time (as is observed) do favour of his Spirit, for grace and manner of Preaching, which was most attractive. He lived Pastor of the Church about Eighteen years, and was most intense and faithful in declaring much of the Counsel of God. He went through a great part of the Body of Divinity; made a very excellent Exposition of the Book of Genesis, and part of Exodus;

Exodus; and delivered many fruitful and profitable Sermons on the four first Chapters of *John*; and in his *Monthly Lectures*, which were abundantly frequented, he Preached of *Mans Misery by Sin*, and *Recovery by Christ Jesus*; and died in the third part of it, viz. concerning *Mans Obedience in Christ*: besides many other excellent Truths by him taught upon divers occasions. In all his Labours God was wonderfully present with him. He was a person that held very near Communion with God; Eminent in *Wisdom*, *Piety*, *Humility*, *Love*, *Self-denial*, and of a compassionate and tender heart; surpassing in *Publick-spiritedness*; a mighty man in *Prayer*, and Eminent at standing in the Gap; he was zealous for *Order*, and faithful in asserting the *Truth* against all Oppugners of it. In a word, he was a man whom God had richly furnished, and eminently fitted for his Work; lived desired, and died lamented by all good Christians that knew him. It pleased God upon the Ninth of *July*, 1668. in a hot and burning season, (but much more hot in the Heat of Gods Anger to *New-England*) to take him to Rest and Glory, about the 43 year of his Age. His Race was but short, but the Work he did was very much. The *Elegies* following may give the Reader a further account of what esteem he was.

Upon the Death of that truely Godly, Reverend, and Faithful Servant of Christ, Mr. *Jonathan Mitchell*, Pastor of the Church at *Cambridge*, who deceased *July 9th* 1668.

VVhat shall we say? Of sad Effects what fear?
 Four Splendent Stars extinguis'd in one year:
 Two Old, one Young, and this of Middle Age;
 A brightest Light, most eyes who did ingage.
 The Lord in's Temple is, Earth silence keep;
 Dispute not over-bold this Judgement deep.
 A Mourning great, each Eye distilling Streams;
 Sad Sighs and Sobs in most men's mouthes their Thearns:
 And

And who can blame it? for this we well may,
 If Love, if Fear, if Temple-shakes bear smay.
 The Wife hath lost her Head; four hopeful Stems
 A Father; Cambridge too their Crowning Gems;
 Neighbours, a useful Light; Elders, a Brother,
 Whose Head and Mouth made him to most a Father.
 Sad Cambridge, when thou lost thy Thomas dear;
 God pitied thee, and gave a right Compeer;
 This Jonathan thy Mitchell, one in whom
 Was Much-of-EL, a Michael judg'd by some.
 Right strong in School, in Desk of brightest shine;
 Artist, good Linguist, high Orthodox Divine;
 Of Judgement deep; of Memory how large!
 Invention quick, grave, pleasant; who can charge
 Thee in thy Theory or Practick with dark fail?
 Humble, Sincere, whose Love-cords did avail.

Much good by him you Cambridge have receiv'd:
 He gone, by you his Relicts see reliev'd.
 A Royal Quare 'twas, when Jonathan dead,
 And Royal Act, Jonathan's Stems to feed.

E. B.

To the Memory of the Learned and Reverend, Mr.
 Jonathan Mitchell, late Minister of Cambridge in
 N. E. Inhumed July 10. 1668.

Quicquid agimus, quicquid Patimur venit ex Alto.

THe Countries Tears, be ye my Spring; my Hill
 A general Grave; let Groans inspire my Quill
 With an Heart-rending Sense, drawn from the Cries
 Of Orphan Churches, and the Destinies
 Of a Bereaved House: Let Children weep
 They scarce know why; and let the Mother steep

Cc

Her

Her lifeless Hopes in Brine; The Private Friend
 O'whelm'd with grief falter his Comforts end.
 By a warm Sympathie let Feaverish Heat
 Roam through my Verse unseen; and a Cold Sweat
 Limning Despair, attend me; Sighs diffuse
 Convulsions through my language, such as use
 To type a Gasping Fancy; Lastly shroud
 Religions Splendor in a Mourning Cloud,
 Replete with Vengeance for succeeding Times
 Fertile in Woes, more fertile in their Crimes.
 These are my Muses; These inspire the Sails
 Of Fancy with their Sighs instead of Gales.
 Reader, reade Rev'rend Mitchel's Life, and then
 Confess the World a Gordian Knot agen.
 Reade his Tear-delug'd Grave, and then decree
 Our present Woe, and future Miserie.
 Stars falling speak a Storm: when Samuel dies,
 Saul may expect Philistia's Cruelties.
 So when Jehovah's brighter Glory fled
 The Temple, Israel was Captive led.
 Geneva's Triple Light made one Divine,
 But here that vast Triumvirate combine
 By a blest Metempycosis, to take
 One Person for their larger Zodiake.
 In Sacred Censures, Farrels dreadfull Scroul
 Of Words, broke from the Pulpit to the Soul.
 [Indulgent Parents when they spare, they spoyle;
 Old Wounds need Vinegar as well as Oyle:
 Distaffful Cates with Miseries do suit;
 The Paschal Lamb was eat with bitter fruit.]
 In Balmy Comforts, Virets Genius came
 From th' wrinkled Alps to woe the Western Dame;
 And Courting Cambridge, quickly took from thence
 Her last Degrees of Rhetorick and Sense.
 Calvin's Laconicks through his Doctrine spred,
 And Children's Children with their Manna fed.

His

His Exposition Genesis begun,
 And fatal Exodus Eclips'd his Sun.
 Some say that Souls oft sad Presages give ;
 Death-breathing Sermons taught us last to live.
 One sownes another reaps, may truly be
 Our Grave-Instruction, and his Elegie.
 His System of Religion half unheard,
 Full double in his Preaching Life appear'd.
 Happy that place where Rulers Deeds appear
 I'th' Front o'th' Battel, and their Words i'th' Rear.
 He's gone, to whom his Country owes a love
 Worthy the prudent Serpent, and the Dove.
 Religion's Panoply, the Sinners Terrour,
 Death summon'd hence sure by a Writ of Errour.
 The Quaker trembling at his Thunder, fled ;
 And with Caligula refum'd his Bed.
 He by the Motions of a Nobler Spirit
 Clear'd Men, and made their Notions Swine inherit.
 The Munster Goblin by his holy flood
 Exorcis'd, like a thin Phantasma stood.
 Brown's Babel shatter'd by his Lightning, fell ;
 And with Confused Horrour pack'd to hell.
 The Scripture with a Commentary bound
 (Like a lost Calice) in his Heart was found.
 When he was Sick, the Air a Feaver took,
 And thirsty Phoebus quafft the Silver Brook :
 When Dead, the Spheres in Thunder, Clouds & Rain
 Groan'd his Elegium, Mourn'd and Wept our Pain.
 Let not the Brazen Schismatiick affre ;
 Lot's leaving Sodom, left them to the Fire.
 'T is true, the Bee's now dead, but yet his Sting
 Death's to their Dronish Doctrines yet may bring.

Epitaphium.

Here lies within this Comprehensive Span,
The Churches, Courts, and Countries Jonathan.
He that speaks Mitchell, gives the Schools the Lie ;
Friendship in Him gain'd an Ubiquity.

Vivet post Funera Virtus.

F. D.

An Epitaph upon the deplored Death of that Super-eminent Minister of the Gospel, Mr. Jonathan Mitchell.

Here lies the Darling of his times
Mitchell, Expire in his prime ;
who four years short of Fourty seven
was found full Ripe, and pluck'd for Heaven.
Was full of prudent Zeal, and Love,
Faith, Patience, Wisdome from above :
New-England's Stay, next Ages Story ;
The Charches Gemme ; the Colledge Glory.
Angels may speak him ; Ah ! not I,
(Whose Worth's above Hyperbole).
But for our Loss, wer't in my power,
I'de weep an Everlasting Shower.

J. S.

A fourth Minister that died this year, was Mr. John Eliot Junior, born at Roxbury in New-England, Eldest Son of the Reverend Mr. John Eliot, Teacher of the Church there. He was Educated (at Cambridge) in the Latine School, and in the Colledge, till he became Master of Arts ; and a few years after was called to be Pastor of a Church within the Bounds of Cambridge, upon the South side of Charles River. He was a person excellently endowed, and accomplished with Gifts of Nature,

Nature, Learning, and Grace; of comely Proportion, ruddy Complexion, cheerful Countenance; of quick Apprehension, solid Judgement, excellent Prudence; Learned both in Tongues and Arts for one of his time, and studiously intense in acquiring more knowledge. His Abilities and Acceptation in the Ministry did excell; His Piety, Faith, Love, Humility, Self-denial, and Zeal, did eminently shine upon all occasions. He had (under the conduct of his Father) by his diligence, industry, and zeal (for the good of Souls) attained to such skill in the Indian Language, that he Preached to the Indians sundry years; Travelling many miles in a day once a Fortnight to dispense the Gospel to them. The Indians have often said, that *his Preaching to them was precious and desireable*; and consequently their loss, and the obstruction in that Work, much to be lamented. In a word, there was so much of God in him, that all the wife and godly who knew him, loved and honoured him in the Lord, and bewailed his death; which fell upon the 13 day of October 1668. and of his Age about 35 years.

I shall close up this small History with a word of Advice to the Rising-generation, That as now their godly Predecessors have had large Experience of the goodness and faithfulness of God, for the space of near Fourty six years (some of them) and have passed under various Dispensations, sometimes under great Afflictions, other-while the Sun shining upon their Tabernacles in wayes of peace and prosperity, and yet notwithstanding, through the grace of Christ, the most of them have held their integrity in his Wayes: That so, such as succeed them would follow their Examples, so farre as they have followed Christ; that it might not be said of them, as it is to be feared it may be, by what yet appears amongst many of them, That indeed God did once plant a Noble vine in New-England, but it is degenerated into the plant of a strange vine. It were well Jerem. 2. 21.

*that it might be said, that the Rising-generation did serve
the Lord all the dayes of such as in this our Israel are as
Joshua's amongst us, and the Elders that over-lived him,
which have known all the works of the Lord which he
hath done for their Fathers. But if yet notwithstanding
afterwards such shall forget, and not regard those his great
Works here presented before them (besides many more that I
hope by some others may come to their view) be they assured,
He will destroy them, and not build them up. Oh there-
fore, let the truely godly in this Land be incited by the ex-
ample of Moles, as the mouth of the Church, to pray earnest-
ly and incessantly unto the Lord, That his work may yet
appear to his servants, and his glory unto their children;
and, that he would pour out his Spirit upon his Church
and people in New-England, and his blessing upon their
offspring, that they may spring up as among the grass,
and as the willows by the water-courses; That so great
occasion there may be thereby of taking notice thereof in suc-
ceeding generations, to the praise and glory of G O D.
So be it.*

*this gone 1678 19^m Peter Easton
had the drif Bellie afe very sore
which continued on him till late 1688 now 41^m*

F I N I S.



A Brief Chronological Table,

Of the principall P A S S A G E S contained in
New-Englands Memoriall.

In the Year of Christ 1610.

Sundry godly Christians of the *English* Nation remove out
of the North of *England* into the *Netherlands*, and ga-
thered a Church at *Leyden*, where they continued untill the
year 1620.

Page 1,2

1620.

For several Reasons the *English* conclude on a removal from
thence into *America*,

pag. 2,3,4

Letters-Patents were obtained from King *James* of Famous Me-
mory for the Northern parts of *Virginia*, p. 5
July 2. sundry of the *English* set Sail from *Holland* for *South-
hampton*. At their departure Mr. *John Robinson* Pastor of
the *English* Church at *Leyden* writes them a parting Letter,

p. 6, &c.

August 5. they set Sail from *Southampton* for *America*: Many
discouragements hapned on the Voyage,

p. 10, &c.

November 11. they Arrived at *Cape Cod*,

p. 11

And there they entred into a Body-Politick,
And Chose Mr. *John Carver* their Governour for the present
year,

p. 16

Discovery is made for a fit place for Habitation,

ibid.

In the Discovery the *English* are assaulted by the Barbarous
Natives,

p. 19

A place

A brief Chronological Table.

- A place discovered, and there they settled, which was called
New-Plimouth, p. 21, 22
In *January* and *February* was a Mortality amongst the *English*,
which swept away about half the Company, p. 22
Several Articles of Peace were drawn up betwixt the *English* and the great *Indian Sachem Massasoit*, willingly
submitting himself and his People to become the Loyal
Subjects of the Kings of *England*, p. 24
A certain *Indian* named *Squanto*, who had formerly been in
England, became the *Indian Interpreter* for the *English*, and
proved an Instrument of much good to the first Planters,
p. 25

1621.

- Several *Indian Sachems* willingly submitted themselves to the
Government of *New-Plimouth*, and voluntarily acknowledg-
edged themselves and their People to be the Loyal Subjects
of the Kings of *England*, p. 29
Indian Grain planted, and *English Grain* sowed by the *English*
this year, but with little success. In *April* Mr. *John Carver*
Governour of *Plimouth* died, his Wife not succeeding him
above six weeks, p. 30, 31
Mr. *William Bradford* was Chosen Governour in his stead.
Mr. *Edward Winslow* and Mr. *Stephen Hopkins* give the great
Sachem Massasoit a Visit, p. 31
The *English* view the *Massachusetts Bay*, being courteously en-
tertained by the *Indians* the Natives thereof, p. 32
In *November* one Mr. *Robert Cushman* arrived at *New-Plimouth*,
who brought over 35 Passengers, p. 33
The *Narraganset Indians* send the *English* a Challenge, which
the *English* answer with another, but they would not accept
of it, ibid.

1622.

- The *English* hold Correspondency with the *Indians* of the *Massa-
chusetts Bay* by trading with them, p. 34
By reason of daily rumours of the *Indians* Insurrection, the
English build them a strong Fort, in which were several
great

A brief Chronological Table.

- great Pieces of Ordnance mounted, p.37
A great Drought hapned this summer, from *May* 3. until the middle of *July* there was no Rain, so that the Corn began to wither away, but the Lord remarkably answered the Prayers of his people even to admiration, p.37,38
- A remarkable Providence of God, tending to the relief of the first Planters being in great extremity, p.39
- Here arrived three Ships from one Mr. *Thomas Weston* Merchant, with 67 lusty men, who seated themselves in in a part of the *Massachusetts Bay*, now called *Weymouth*, p.35,36
- Westons* unruly Company fall into great wants, p.40
- 1623.
- The *Indians*, by reason of *Westons* disorderly Company, stealing away their Corn, &c. carry it very insultingly over them, and enter into a Conspiracy to cut off the *English*; which Conspiracy being occasionally discover'd by the Sachem *Mas-sasoit*, was prevented by the *English*, p.41, &c.
- Westons* Plantation wholly ruined, p.43
- Mr. *John Pierce* in his Voyage to *New-England*, was by reason of leaks and great storms twice driven back to *England*, in whose ship was 109 persons, p.45,46
- In June one Capt. *Francis West*, who had Commission to be Admiral of *N.E.*, arrived at *Plimouth*, but by reason of discouragements he quickly left the Country, p.47
- Two ships, the *Anne* and *James*, arrive in *Plimouth*, p.47,48
- Capt. *Robert Gorges* arrives in *Plimouth*, begins a second Plantation of the *Massachusetts Bay*, which quickly brake in pieces. Capt. *Robert Gorges* had Commission from the Council of *N.E.* to be the General Governour of the Country; he brought over with him a Minister, on Mr. *Morrel*, that had a Superintendent Authority over other Churches granted him: but they both being discouraged, quickly returned home to *England*, p.49 to 52
- A Fire which did considerable damage at *Plimouth*. Several of the Inhabitants through discontent and casualties, remove into *Virginia*, p.51

A brief Chronological Table.

1624.

The Number of Magistrates increased to 5 at *Plimouth*, p. 53
The first Neat Cattel brought into the Country, ibid.
Lyford and *Oldham*, for their treacherous undermining the Government of *Plimouth*, and setting up a Schismatical Church, are both Banished that Jurisdiction, p. 53, &c.

1625.

Remarkable Judgements of God upon those two *Machiavilians* *Liford* and *Oldham*, p. 59, &c.
Many of the *Merchant-Adventurers* prove open Adversaries to the Plantation of *Plimouth*, p. 61
A remarkable Providence of God on the *Merchant-Adventurers*, p. 62
Successful Trading with the *Indians* of *Kenebek*, p. 61
Capt. *Miles Standish* goes over to *England* as an Agent in the behalf of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, p. 62

1626.

In April Capt. *Standish* arrives in *Plimouth*, brings sad tidings of Mr. *John Robinsons*, and Mr. *Robert Cushman*'s death, p. 63
They receive divers Letters from their friends in *Holland*, p. 64

1627.

Mr. *Isaac Allerton* goes over for *England* Agent for the Plantation with the *Merchant-Adventurers*, p. 64
The first distribution of Land amongst the Inhabitants of *Plimouth*, p. 65

A ship with many Passengers in her, bound for *Virginia*, was cast away at the middle of *Mannamoit Bay*, but they saved their lives and their goods, and were courteously entertained at *Plimouth*, p. 65, &c.

The *Dutch* Plantation desire Commerce with *Plimouth*, which they grant them, and so they held mutual and profitable correspondence together. The *Dutch* acquaint the *English* with the trading of *Wampam-peas*, p. 67

1628.

Morton for his Atheistical and licentious Practises, is apprehended by Capt. *Standish*, & sent home to *England*, p. 68, &c.

Mr.

A brief Chronological Table.

Mr. John Endicott arrives, bringing with him a Patent under the Broad-Seal of England, for the Government of the *Massachusetts*, p. 70

1629.

Three ships arrive at Salem, bringing a great number of Passengers from England: Infectious diseases amongst them, p. 73

Mr. Higginson, Mr. Skelton, Mr. Bright, Ministers, arrive, p. 74

Upon Aug. 5. was the first Church in the *Massachusetts* Colony gathered, viz. at Salem, p. 75

The Book of Common-Prayer pleaded for, and practised in *Massachusetts* Colony by two of the Patentees, p. 76

But was quickly prohibited by the Authority there, p. 77

1630.

Mr. Higginson Teacher of Salem Church died, p. 78

A Fleet of ten ships arrived in the *Massachusetts* Colony; in which came over many worthy Instruments, Mr. John Winthrop, and Mr. Thomas Dudy Magistrates; Mr. Isaac Johnson Esq; and Mr. John VVilson, Mr. George Philips, Mr. Maverick, and Mr. VVareham, Ministers, arrived. Mr. Isaac Johnson Magistrate of the *Massachusetts*, and his Lady, soon after their arrival, died, p. 83

Churches gathered { Boston, by Mr. John VVilson,
VVatertown, by Mr. Philips,
this year at { Dorchester, by Mr. Maverick
and Mr. VVareham, } p. 84

1631. A Church gathered at Roxbury by Mr. John Eliot and Mr. VVeld, p. 85

1632.

Sir Christopher Gardiner (a strong Papist) arrived in N.E. who for some miscarriages left the Country, and returned home to England, and there proved an open Adversary to the Country, p. 85, 86

The Lords of the Kings most honourable Privy-Council favour the Plantations of N.E. by their encouraging Order, p. 87, 88

1633.

The number of Magistrates at Plimouth increased to seven, p. 89

A brief Chronological Table.

- An infectious Feaver amongst the Inhabitants of Plimouth,
whereof many died, p.90
- Great swarms of strange Flies up and down the Country, which
was a presage of the following mortality, p.91
- Mr. John Cotton, Mr. Hooker, and Mr. Stone, Ministers, arrive
in N. E. ibid.
- Mr. William Collier, a liberal Benefactor to the Colony of New-
Plimouth, arrives in N. E. ibid.
1634. Mr. Skelton Pastor to the Church at Salem died. p.78
- A great mortality amongst the Indians by the Small Pox, p.92
- Capt. Stone turns Pirat at the Dutch Plantation, and there seizes
on a Plimouth Barque that was there trading, p.93
- The cruel Massacre of Capt. Stone and Capt. Norton at Con-
necticut River by the Pequot Indians, p.92, 93
- Mr. Roger Williams lamentable Apostacy, in 1637. p.78, &c.
He is Banished by the Massachusetts Colony, ibid.
- 1635.
- Mr. Edward Winslow sent over to England as a publick Agent
for the Country, p.94
- An Hurracane which did great damage both by sea & land, p.95
- 1636.
- Connecticut Colony planted this year by many worthy Instruments.
Two shallops loaden with goods were cast away in
the mouth of Plimouth Harbour, the goods were saved, ten
men drowned, p.96
- Mr. John Oldham murthered in his Barque by the Indians of
Block-Island, p.98
- 1637.
- The Pequot Wars; in which War the English slew and took Pri-
soners about 700 Indians, and slew 13 Sachems, to the great
terrore of all the Natives, p.99
- New-Haven Colony began this year, p.106
- Antinomian and Familistical Errours are broach'd in the Coun-
try, especially at Boston, ibid.
- A Synod is called, which condemned these Errours out of the
Word

A brief Chronological Table.

- Word of God, p. 107
Mrs. Hutchinson and Errours are banished by the Magistrates
of the *Massachusetts Colony*, ibid.
A hideous Monster born at *Boston* of one *Mrs. Mary Dyer*, p. 108
1638.
- Three English-men were put to death at *Plimouth* for robbing
and murthering an Indian near *Providence*, p. 111
June 2. a great and fearful Earthquake in the Country, ibid.
Gorton, a pestilent Seducer, and blasphemous Atheist, is banished
Plimouth Colony, Whipt and banished from *Road-Island*, ba-
nished the *Massachusetts Colony*, p. 108, &c.
1639.
- Harvard Colledge* founded at *Cambridge* by Mr. John Harvard
of worthy memory, p. 112
Articles of Peace renewed with *Massasoit* Sachem, and his Son
Mooanam, by the Government of *Plimouth*, p. 112, &c.
1642.
- Thirteen able godly Ministers at this time in *Plimouth* Jurisdi-
ction, shined as bright Stars in the Churches Firmament, p. 116
1643.
- Mr. William Brewster, Ruling Elder in the Church of *Plimouth*
died in the 84 year of his Age, p. 117
May 19. was the first Combination of the four United Colo-
nies of N.E., p. 120
1644.
- Mr. John Atwood, an eminent Benefactor to the Colony of *Pli-*
mouth, died, p. 121
The Town of *Eastham* erected by divers considerable persons
of *Plimouth*, ibid.
1646.
- Three men of War arrived in *Plimouth* Harbour under the com-
mand of Capt. Tho: Cromwel, richly laden. A mutiny amongst
the Seamen, whereby one man is killed, p. 123
Mr. Edw. Winslow goes over into *England* Agent for the *Massa-*
chusetts Colony, to answer the complaints of sundry discon-
tent persons, but returned no more to N. E. p. 124
Dd 3 1647.

A brief Chronological Table.

1647.

Mr. Thomas Hooker, Pastor of the Church at Hartford, rested from his labours,

p.123

1649.

March 26. Mr. John Winthrop Governor of the Massachusetts deceased,

p.130

An innumerable company of Caterpillers in some parts of the Country destroyed the Fruits of the Earth,

p.131

August 25. Mr. Thomas Shepard Pastor of Cambridge Church died,

ibid.

An Act of Parliament passed in England for promoting and propagating the Gospel amongst the Indians in N.E. In reference to which, an Indian Corporation was there established. Able Instruments encouraged to preach the Gospel to the Indians in N.E. the Bible was translated into the Indian Language by Mr. John Eliot, and (in 1664.) was printed at Cambridge,

p.131

1650.

A great mortality amongst Children this year,

p.133

1651.

Mr. Wil: Thomas Magistrate of Plimouth Colony died,

p.134

1652.

Mr. John Cotton Teacher of Boston Church died. A Comet was seen at the time of his sickness hanging over N.E. which went out soon after his death,

p.135, &c.

1653.

July 31. Mr. Thomas Dudy Governor of the Massachusetts died, about the 77 year of his Age,

p.139

1655.

Plimouth hears sad news of the death of Mr. Edward Winslow, who had sometimes been their Governor,

p.142

1656.

Capt. Miles Standish Magistrate of Plimouth died,

p.143

1657.

May 3. Mr. William Bradford Governor of Plimouth died,

p.144

The Quakers (that cursed Sect) arrive at Plimouth,

p.151

Mr. Theophil: Eaton Governor of Newhaven Colony died,

p. 152

Mr.

A brief Chronological Table.

- Mr. Garret cast away in his Voyage from *Boston* to *England*,
which was a great los to the Country, p. 152
- 1658.
- A great Earthquake was heard in N.E. p. 153
- Mr. Ralph Partridge Minister at *Duxbury* deceased, ibid.
- John Philips of *Marsfield* slain by Thunder & Lightning, p. 155
- Mr. William Paddy Deacon of *Plimouth* Church died, ibid.
- 1659.
- The damnable Opinions of the Quakers are vented up and
down the Country, p. 157
- Mr. Henry Dunster, first President of *Harvard* Colledge, de-
ceased, p. 158
- 1660.
- James Pierce slain by Lightning at *Plimouth*, p. 159
- 1662.
- In January several Earthquakes were heard in N.E. p. 161
- Philip Sachem of *Pokanaket* renews the Articles of Peace made
betwixt the Government of *Plimouth*, and his Father & Bro-
ther, p. 160
- Mr. John Brown Magistrate of *Plimouth* Colony ended this life,
p. 163, 164
- 1663.
- Mr. Samuel Newman Teacher of *Rehoboth* died, p. 164.
- Mr. John Norton Teacher of *Boston* died suddenly, p. 165
- Mr. Samuel Stone Teacher of *Hartford* deceased, p. 168
- 1664.
- A great and dreadful Comet appeared in *New-England* for the
space of three moneths, which was accompanied with many
sad Effects, p. 170
- Great mildew and blasting in the Country, p. 172
- The Kings Commissioners arrived at *Boston* in N.E. p. 173
- Manado's surrendred up to His Majesty, and called *New-York*, p. 173
- Colonel Cartwright on his Voyage to *England* was taken by
the Dutch. Sir Robert Garre died the next day after his ar-
rival in *Bristol*, p. 174

A brief Chronological Table.

1665.

- Mr. John Endicott Governor of the *Massachusetts*, died, p. 176
Capt. Davenport killed with Lightning as he lay on his Bed at
the Castle, p. 177
Wheat exceedingly blasted and mildewed, ibid.

1666.

- Three killed in a moment by a blow of Thunder at *Marlfield*,
and four at *Piscataqua*, and divers hurt. A great Whirlwind
at the same time, p. 178
The Small Pox at *Boston*, p. 179
The mildew and blasting of the Corn still continued, ibid.
A remarkable manifestation of Gods goodness to some poor
Salvages in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*, p. 180
The death of Mr. William Thompson Minister at *Braintry*, 181

1667.

- Several Vollsies of shot heard discharged in the Air at *Nantasket*.
In March there appeared a Sign in the Heavens in the form
of a Spear, pointing directly to the West, p. 182
Mr. John Wilson, who had been Pastor of *Boston* Church 37
years, rested from his labours in the 79 year of his Age, p. 183

1668.

- Mr. Samuel Shepard Pastor of *Rowley* Churc died, p. 190
April 27. Mr. Henry Flint, Teacher at *Braintry*, died, ibid.
July 9. Mr. Jonathan Mitchel, Pastor of the Church at *Cam-*
bridge, deceased, p. 190, &c.
October 13. Mr. John Eliot junior, Pastor of a Church within
the Bounds of *Cambridge*, departed this life, p. 196, 197
The Conclusion of the History, with Advice to the Rising genera-
ration, p. 197, 198

The
Mr.

F I N I S.

Walter Lichten

